12612.de.12.

# THE HISTORY OF BETTY BARNES.

## VOL. II.

LONDON:
Printed for D. WILSON and T. DURHAM,
at Plato's Head, in the Strand.
MDCCLIII.

MUSEUM BRITANNICUM

# THE HISTORY OF BETTY BARNES.

## BOOK IV.

### CHAP. I.

Which, tho' it may not appear extremely intereſting, opens the way for events that are ſo.

MRS. Milner had been paying a viſit, when ſuddenly returning home in an extreme ill humour, ſhe inſtantly paid and diſcharged all her ſervants, and tho' Betty was the only one who had been ſilent on the ſubject which gave her miſtreſs ſo much concern, ſhe was the firſt who felt the effects of her reſentment, and the firſt, who after receiving her wages, was turned out of doors.

ON leaving her place, ſhe went to the friendly Mrs. Robinſon's, who told her

that ſhe had received a viſit from Mr. Marſhall, who had entreated her to permit her ſervant to bring Betty a letter, which ſhe told her ſhe had refuſed him. At this Betty coloured, and ſhewed ſome ſigns of diſſatisfaction; but Mrs. Robinſon without ſeeming to perceive it went on: "I have," ſaid ſhe, "no manner of "diſlike to your intimacy; nor do I be-"lieve I ſhould, if he was my own ſon, "and I had his mother's fortune; but to "be inſtrumental in carrying on a clan-"deſtine courtſhip, is a meanneſs that "ſhocks all my pride. I can't have the "ſame excuſe that you may alledge: I "can have no youthful paſſion to grati-"fy. It muſt be in me a ſettled deſign "of doing what I have reaſon to believe "will be offenſive to his mother; whom "from the character I have heard of her, "I really eſteem. For the ſame reaſon," ſhe continued, "I alſo refuſed another re-"queſt of his, tho' it gave me a high "opinion of the ſincerity of his paſſion." "I wonder what that could be," replied Betty; "but I find you were reſolved to "refuſe whatever he had a mind to aſk." Mrs. Robinſon ſmiled and proceeded, "He deſired that I would, if it was poſ-"ſible, prevail with you to come and live "with me, and he would, without your

"know-

" knowledge, diſcharge any additional
" expence you would occaſion in my fa-
" mily; but that it would be neceſſary
" that I ſhould give you ſome employ-
" ment, to prevent your ſuſpecting the con-
" trivance, which, if you did, he was ſure
" nothing would engage you to ſtay. Now
" Betty, tho' I deny'd him this requeſt,
" I fancy I ſhall have occaſion for one in
" whom I can confide, for my poor cou-
" ſin, is, to her inconceivable grief, with
" child; ſhe is now a little way out of
" town, and has made no one acquainted
" with her misfortune but myſelf."

BETTY ſhewed her good ſenſe, by letting the reaſons Mrs. Robinſon had given for her conduct, remove from her face the gloom with which it had been overcaſt, on her telling her, that ſhe had refuſed to ſend to her Mr. Marſhall's letters. It was however agreed, that ſhe ſhould look out for another place; but if ſhe could not ſuit herſelf to her mind, ſhe ſhould attend Mrs. Robinſon's unhappy kinſwoman.

THAT young lady had never been well ſince the death of her lover, whom ſhe lamented with a ſincerity that is ſeldom equalled, yet, in ſpite of all her grief, ſhe carried to its full time the little witneſs of her imprudence; but before this happened, Betty was very near hiring herſelf to

a place, which, in all probability, would have been very little to her ſatisfaction.

IN the beginning of this work we have mentioned Mrs. Seaward, who had now changed her name, by having choſen for her ſecond huſband one of thoſe men of quality who derive ſuch honour from their anceſtors, that they imagine no perſonal action of theirs will be able to ſtain. To this nobleman gold was much dearer than beauty, ſince his lordſhip had frequently found, that metal able to purchaſe every ſatisfaction his grovelling ſoul was capable of taſting with the fair; and as to his lady, it is hardly to be ſuppoſed, that a bare title had much mended her heart, tho' it had greatly leſſened her fortune.

TO this honourable perſon's ſervice Betty had been recommended, and to his lordſhip's houſe ſhe went, and had juſt given the houſe-keeper directions where ſhe was to enquire into her character and qualifications, when to her great ſurprize, ſhe heard a voice to which ſhe was no ſtranger, and preſently after ſaw honeſt Joſeph enter the hall, and paſs by her, in order to go into the ſtreet.

THIS worthy man had come to London to pay his rent, and to tranſact ſome other buſineſs relating to his farm; Betty haſtily followed him, and deſired him to ſtay,

on

on which turning about, he confeſſed that he had not the leaſt knowledge of her perſon, and could not recollect that he had ever ſeen her before: but on her making herſelf known, he expreſſed much joy at ſeeing her, and enquired very particularly into her circumſtances, of which ſhe gave him an account without the leaſt reſerve, except in what related to her lover. The good old man now made her once more the offer of coming to live with him, and hinted, that if ſhe accepted his propoſal, ſhe might, at his death, find ſomething worth coming for: but her heart would not ſuffer her to heſitate a moment before ſhe refuſed the offer, notwithſtanding all its advantages, tho' this refuſal was expreſſed in terms of the warmeſt gratitude. The honeſt farmer ſeemed vexed and diſappointed at her denial, and let her know, that he ſuppoſed ſome London blade was the cauſe of her not accepting his offer; but told her he ſhould always wiſh her well, and be glad to contribute to her happineſs. He next deſired to know, what had brought her to that houſe, and on her telling him, he ſeemed a little ſtartled, and after heſitating a few moments replied. "I have many "reaſons againſt your accepting this place. "I was once the lady's ſervant myſelf,

" and I then ſeed how ſhe uſed her maid,
" and I ſuppoſe, thoff ſhe is now called
" my lady, ſhe is not much bettered. I
" have heard my poor wife ſay, that of
" all the places ſhe ever lived in, ſhe
" never had ſo bad a miſtreſs, and that ſhe
" ſhould not have ſtayed with her half ſo
" long as ſhe did, if it had not been on
" my account. I am ſure, my maſter,
" 'ſquire Seaward had enough to do with
" her: an I had been in his place, I would
" have ſet her a drift, for all her vaſt for-
" tune. But if ſhe was better than ſhe
" is, I think it would not have been a fit
" place for you. How would you have
" been able to ſerve her, an you had
" known her cruelty to your own mo-
" ther?" " My mother!" cryed Betty,
with a look of amazement: " I don't un-
" derſtand you." " Yes, your mother,"
returned Joſeph, " ſhe was little better
" than her murderer, ſhe turned her out
" of the barn when you was but juſt born
" into the world. I am ſure I have curſt
" her a hundred, and a hundred times to
" that, for this hard-hearted action."
" Good God," cryed Betty, " what a
" place have I eſcaped! had I not known
" this till I had been in her houſe, what
" a ſervant ſhould I have made! how
" ſhould I have been able to wait on ſuch

" a

"a monſter! Serve her who had been ſo "inhumanly cruel to my mother! I can't "bear the thought of it. Indeed," added ſhe, with the tears ſtreaming from her eyes, "I am greatly obliged to you, I "give you a thouſand thanks for this in-"formation,—I would not live with her "if there was never another place in the "world." The farmer highly approved of this reſolution, and after repeating his good wiſhes, with freſh aſſurances that he ſhould be glad to ſee her at his houſe, left her.

Betty now returned to Mrs. Robinſon's, and having told her that ſhe reſolved never more to enquire after the above place, was deſired to ſtay there till it would be convenient to wait on the unhappy Miſs Stevens, which ſoon after happened, and the poor young lady was brought to bed of a dead child, without any one (except her couſin and Betty) being truſted with the ſecret. The perſons who aſſiſted, taking her for a country gentlewoman who came to town for no other reaſon but to lie in. As ſoon as ſhe was fit to be removed, ſhe went again to her former lodgings, and Betty with her, of whom ſhe grew extreamly fond, in return for her more than common

care when ſhe was in a condition that needed it.

## CHAP. II.

In which Betty is in mortal apprehenſions for the fidelity of her lover, who, on his ſide, is not in a much happier ſituation.

BY this time Mr. Marſhall was returned from his viſit to his mother's father, who during his illneſs, had made a proviſion for his grandſon that far exceeded his hopes, and he was poſting to give his miſtreſs an account of the reaſon of his long abſence; for he had learnt from Mrs. Robinſon where ſhe was, when he met with his couſin Glanville.

THE ſight of this gentleman, whom he had not ſeen ſince his late drubbing, gave him ſenſations very different from thoſe commonly inſpired, when we behold a relation who has been ſome time abſent: in ſhort, he had much ado to diſſemble his rage. His couſin ſurprized at his unuſual coldneſs, endeavoured to remove it by a frank and open air, and by degrees Mr. Marſhall, to prevent his betraying his own ſecret, recovered his temper enough to conceal his

his reſentment. Mr. Glanville ſtopped at the very houſe to which his couſin had been directed, and to Mr. Marſhall's great ſurprize, aſked for Miſs Stevens's maid. Betty came to the gate; but it would want the pencil of a Hogarth, or the pen of a Fielding, to paint the different attitudes they were thrown into by their aſtoniſhment. The appearance of amity ſhe fancied ſhe ſaw on the countenance of the two gentlemen before they beheld her, gave her the moſt dreadful apprehenſions, and her thoughts were in a wild confuſion, which had changed her florid bloom into a death-like paleneſs, when Mr. Glanville cried out in a tone of tranſport, "Ha! I "did not think paying a debt I owed to "a dead friend, would bring me to the "ſight of a living miſtreſs. Nay, no "going," he continued, on ſeeing her turn away, "I have buſineſs with your "lady, and muſt ſee her." Betty could hardly deliver her meſſage to her miſtreſs, who appointed Mr. Glanville to wait on her in the afternoon the next day. The two couſins ſtaid for an anſwer, which was brought them by a ſervant belonging to the houſe.

Betty began now to have notions very injurious to her lover's affection, and was reſolved he ſhould not triumph in her

ſenſibility. Mrs. Robinſon had ſent a meſſenger to her kinſwoman on ſome buſineſs, and had ordered the man to let Betty know, that ſhe had told Mr. Marſhall where to find her. The man had come juſt before the arrival of the two gentlemen, and the poor girl was pleaſing herſelf with the hopes of ſeeing her lover, when the ſight of her maſter Glanville, whom ſhe heartily deteſted, and who had increaſed her hatred by his uſage of her dear Mr. Marſhall, gave her the utmoſt terror; but to ſee him with this favoured lover, raiſed her indignation as well as her fear. Nothing appeared more certain to her tortured imagination, than that Mr. Marſhall had given up his title to her affection, as the price of his reconcilement with his couſin.

WHILE ſhe was actuated by theſe painful ſuſpicions, her lover was very little more at eaſe. He ſaw as plainly, that nothing but indifference could have hindered her from returning herſelf with her lady's anſwer, and made ſtrong reſolutions to tear her from his heart. Mr. Glanville, who was much more at eaſe, for a new object had a little worn off his paſſion for Betty, in order to divert his couſin's melancholy, told him the hiſtory of his love, and the adventure of his porter with

with his rival; but as he did not mention any new attachment, the young gentleman attributed his preſent gaiety to ſome hopes which he concealed, and was very little in humour to laugh at his own baſting: he even looked on his appointment with the miſtreſs, as a feint to conceal his viſit to Betty, and he was confirmed in this ſuſpicion by Mr. Glanville's refuſing to tell his buſineſs with the lady.

The following day Mr. Glanville came according to his appointment, and was received by Miſs Stevens with the greateſt affability; the agitation Betty had been in had ſo diſordered her, that ſhe did not appear, and Mr. Glanville, in order to know if ſhe had ſaid any thing to his prejudice, aſked Miſs Stevens how long ſhe had had her preſent ſervant, adding with a careleſs look, "I knew a gentle-"man of ſome fortune who would have "married her; but the ſilly girl refuſed "him." Miſs Stevens anſwered him, "Perhaps the girl is not ſo ſilly as you "think, ſuppoſe ſhe refuſed him for a "man of better fortune, would ſhe be "then to blame?" "No certainly," he replied; "but ſo far is that from being "the caſe, that I am informed her lover "is ſome tradeſman's footman." Her miſtreſs told him, that ſhe believed

he was miſinformed; for ſhe thought Betty above acting a baſe part, and to her knowledge ſhe was beloved by one in very different circumſtances. This Miſs Stevens thought ſhe might venture to ſay without any danger of a diſcovery.

MR. Glanville after having executed his commiſſion took his leave, when he found he had been dogged by his couſin; for he ſaw that gentleman poſted in a publick houſe oppoſite to the very room where he had been converſing with the unhappy young lady. His uneaſineſs was too great to be concealed, and as Mr. Glanville had aſked him in vain the reaſon of his being alone in that town the day before, he began to have ſuſpicions, that he was Miſs Stevens's ſecret admirer. But I imagine my reader will be glad to know what was Mr. Glanville's buſineſs with the lady, take it then as follows.

CHAP.

## CHAP. III.

Gives ſome light into that affair which cauſed the diſagreeable rencounter between the two couſins, tho' it leaves Betty Barnes in a condition not to be envied.

MR. Glanville had been the moſt intimate acquaintance of Miſs Stevens's deceaſed lover, and had been made the confident of his love long before it was made publick; he was even acquainted with the terrible effects of this paſſion: it was from his hand ſhe received the letter which informed her of her lover's illneſs: and whatever the dying man poſſeſſed independant of his father, he bequeathed to this gentleman, in truſt for his afflicted miſtreſs, who then wanted two years of being at age. His being frequently obliged to treat with her on buſineſs, had opened his eyes to her charms, and the glow of friendſhip which fluſhed on her countenance whenever ſhe beheld this deareſt friend of her dead lover, compleated the conqueſt. His preſent viſit had for its excuſe ſome merchandize which he had to account for; it was the product of a venture they had jointly engaged in, and

was

was pretty conſiderable. Mr. Glanville was ſo awed by her tears, that tho' he came with a reſolution to offer her his fortune and his heart, he left her without having uttered a word of his love, and the lady attributed the zeal with which he ſerved her, to his regard to the memory of his deceaſed friend, when ſhe really owed it in part to her own charms.

THE two gentlemen returned to town without ſo much as ſpeaking to each other. Mr. Marſhall was quite convinced that Betty Barnes had ſpent a good part of the afternoon with Mr. Glanville; for as Miſs Stevens was much about her ſize, his diſtempered imagination had miſtaken her for his miſtreſs. Full of this belief, he diſdained to let her know his pain, and determined in his own mind to ſee her no more, and that he might keep his reſolution, returned to his grandfather's country ſeat, and continued there ſome time.

ON the other hand, Betty drooped in ſecret for the loſs of his heart, and ſincerely wiſhed that ſhe had been wiſe enough to have complied with the commands of her miſtreſs Aſkew. This change in her temper was ſoon taken notice of by her preſent miſtreſs, tho' ſhe was a ſtranger to the cauſe, and pride made her ſtill conceal it.

MR.

Mr. Glanville frequently viſited Miſs Stevens, and at length had reſumed courage enough to tell her the ſituation of his heart, and eaſily prevailed on her father to be his advocate. As this gentleman had at ſeveral times paid his daughter near a thouſand pounds, which ſhe could not have legally demanded, as the nature of the engagement was only known to Mr. Glanville, the careful father thought a man of ſo much honour no unworthy match for his daughter, and uſed every argument to prevail on her to give him her hand.

No ſooner was this propoſal known to Betty, than ſhe became intereſted in her maſter's ſucceſs; and endeavoured to combat Miſs Stevens's reluctance to the match. She no longer avoided him, as ſhe had now no fear of his making her propoſals, which ſhe muſt for ever diſlike.

Miss Stevens, who had been by the joint perſuaſions of her father, her couſin Robinſon, and her faithful Betty, prevailed on to admit Mr. Glanville in the quality of a lover, informed that gentleman how much ſhe was obliged to Betty, for her warmth in pleading in his favour. In return for this kindneſs, he made her a genteel preſent, and told her, that ſhe had given too many proofs of her pru-

dence, to need being cautioned to conceal from her lady the diſhonourable propoſal he had once made her, and at the ſame time aſſured her, that he would, if ſhe would give him leave, by informing him where he might meet with him, make her lover a large amends for the rough treatment he had received on his account.

BETTY made no other reply to this, but that ſhe had no lover, nor deſired any, and then haſted from him, leſt the ſtarting tear ſhould give the lie to the aſſertion.

HER uneaſineſs at neither hearing from, nor ſeeing Mr. Marſhall, preyed on her ſpirits and her health. She was indeed convinced, that ſhe had been wrong in her firſt ſuſpicions; but as ſhe was certain, that he knew where to find her, ſhe could attribute his ſtaying ſo long from her, to nothing but his indifference.

WHILE her mind was in this ſituation, ſhe received a letter from honeſt Joſeph, whom ſhe had deſired to direct for her to the houſe of Mrs. Robinſon. He had informed her, that he ſhould in his return home, call at the village where ſhe was born, and had at her requeſt, promiſed to take the ſeat of the good lady Benſon in his way. He accordingly did ſo, and here

here learnt, from ſuch of the ſervants as continued in the family ſince the time when Betty left it, that her ladyſhip was fully convinced of her innocence; and that her nephew and woman were turned out of the houſe in the ignominious manner before related. That the lady was ſo incenſed againſt the vile Judy, that ſhe had refuſed to give her relief, tho' ſhe had ſent her ladyſhip a piteous account of the diſtreſſes ſhe was under from a bad huſband, who had ruined her, and left her in want, after he had ſpent all ſhe had ſaved at ſervice. He was alſo informed, that the captain by an ill run at dice, had been obliged to make over his pay to his creditors, and had at that time no other ſupport than the bounty of his aunt, who maintained him above want, from a regard to a birth which his actions ſo much diſhonoured; but allowed him nothing for luxury. In this letter Joſeph renewed his ſollicitations that ſhe would come to his houſe; and as an inducement, told her, that the ſame day he ſet out from London, he had accidentally met with a ſiſter, whom he had neither ſeen nor heard of for ſeveral years, and that this ſiſter was now with him, ſo that ſhe might have one to talk to, who, he believed, knew as much of London as ſhe could wiſh.

Miss Stevens had made Betty the offer of becoming the upper ſervant in her future family, if ſhe accepted Mr. Glanville, which her father had almoſt perſuaded her to; but this ſhe had refuſed on ſeveral accounts. She was certain ſhe ſhould be known by ſome of the viſitors of his firſt wife, who would undoubtedly pay their compliments to his ſecond lady, and as the late Mrs. Glanville had been of too furious a diſpoſition to conceal her jealouſy, many of them, ſhe was ſure, had been told ſtrange ſtories of her want of virtue; but the principal reaſon of her diſlike to this poſt was, that ſhe ſhould very probably, be obliged to behold her once beloved Mr. Marſhall; to behold him now he had loſt all that ſoftneſs which had been the delight of her eyes and her heart; to behold him accompanied by a happy bride; for his couſin had mentioned to Mrs. Stevens, a relation of his wife's, who was on the point of being married, and Betty, induſtrious to torment herſelf, was abſolutely certain it muſt be him. On theſe conſiderations ſhe reſolved to accept the invitation of the honeſt farmer, and to the regret of Miſs Stevens, ſet out in the ſtage-coach, for the neareſt market-town to the village where Joſeph lived.

CHAP.

## CHAP. IV.

Betty once more a traveller; but tho' in a genteeler vehicle than the firſt, does not eſcape mortification. A ſhort ſketch of the different characters which chance had crouded together in the narrow limits of a ſtage-coach.

BETTY's companions in this journey were a very old lady, and a ſprightly girl her grand-daughter, who ſeemed in a far greater hurry to riſe to notice, than the old lady was to ſink into oblivion: Mr. Timothy, the ſon of a country tradeſman, a meer booby; the gentleman of a man of diſtinction, who glittered in tarniſhed lace; and a young apothecary.

THEY were hardly ſeated, before the gentleman's gentleman began to lament his misfortune that Sir Thomas's coach happened to be full; then adjuſting his dreſs, he with a full ſtare at the old lady's grand-daughter, who was tolerably handſome, cried, "Gadzooks Miſs, I aſk your "pardon for talking ſo like an aſs; "when I wiſhed myſelf in any other "place, I did not know I had an angel "ſo near me." Miſs coloured, and bit

bit her lips, while the old woman with a frown replied, "I wonder how you men "can delight to talk ſuch nonſenſe to "children. Don't mind him, my dear, "he has only a mind to divert himſelf "with your ſimplicity." The young lady with great pertneſs, tho' not loud enough to be heard by the old lady, who was a little deaf, anſwered, "Not quite "ſo ſimple, nor ſo much a child neither, "as you think me, my dear mamma."

This proof of Miſs's ſenſibility, did not eſcape the obſervation of the ſecond hand beau, who practiſed every affected air in a manner perfectly conſiſtent with his tawdry trimmings, and threw himſelf into ſo many odd contorſions of body, that our traveller affirms, had it been her chance to have ſeen him at her firſt coming from her lady, ſhe ſhould certainly have taken him for a lunatic; but in the different places where ſhe had lived, ſhe had met with ſome of theſe lively ſparks; tho', as it happens to moſt copyiſts, he betrayed himſelf, by over-doing the original.

This young fellow had raiſed himſelf from being a footman to his preſent ſtation, by making himſelf uſeful to his maſter in his amours, and particularly by having been greatly inſtrumental in betray-

betraying an honeſt tradeſman's young wife, who had the misfortune to be related to the miſcreant, into the embraces of the baronet, who was too much a man of honour to let ſuch a piece of ſervice paſs unrewarded, tho' the complaint of breaking ſhop-keepers, or needy artificers, gave him no manner of concern, as he thought himſelf above the fear of the laws, by his being concerned in making them.

As the beau ſeemed entirely to engroſs the attention of pretty Miſs, notwithſtanding the admonitions of her grandmother, Betty was left at liberty to receive the polite addreſſes of the young clown, or to liſten to the affected phraſes of the Galenical fop, who was giving the old woman a receipt for the cure of the wind-colic, in terms, which tho' they might diſplay his own great erudition, could be of very little real ſervice to his hearer, as his language was in a mixed jargon of Greek, Latin and Engliſh.

The country youth, after two or three hems, began a converſation with Betty; he told her his buſineſs in town, and the ſights he had ſeen: gave her an account of his own ſagacity, in avoiding the ſnares which had been laid for his perſon and purſe, in the wicked town they had ſet out from,

from, by deſigning men, or lewd women; and concluded with ſaying, that father knew what he did when he ſent him to London; for he was none of thoſe ninny hammers that was to be won by fair ſpeeches, to part with their money.

As this youth had early been taught to believe no crime was more horrid than poverty, nor any acquiſition to be held in compariſon with riches, he would have ſooner boaſted of being the accomplice than the dupe of a villain. But as Betty Barnes had no ſuch extraordinary opinion of his parts as he imagined would be the effect of his ſo beſtirring himſelf in his own favour, ſhe made him very little anſwer, and indeed was at that time practiſing a little female ill-nature. The good old gentlewoman had fallen faſt aſleep, and the pert girl her grand-daughter ſeemed much inclined to make the moſt of this opportunity to converſe with her ſpark; but our traveller for the firſt time, addreſſed herſelf to the young lady, admired the work on her handkerchief, and aſked what ſchool ſhe went to. The cunning chit ſaw the drift of this remark, and anſwered ſmartly, wherever it was, ſhe wiſhed ſhe had been her ſchool-fellow; for her governeſs taught her pupils manners as well as needle-work. Betty, a

little diſconcerted at this retort, remained ſilent, and left the little gentlewoman to hear her fop in peace, who, not diſpoſed to neglect the opportunity, beſtowed the moſt extravagant encomiums on her wit and beauty, told her it would be no wonder, if charms like hers, ſhould inſpire every woman with envy, and every man with love; that for his part, if they ſhould meet with highwaymen, he could with a ſafe conſcience tell them, that he had been robbed already; for he was a heart out of pocket. Mr. Timothy, the country ſtrippling, nettled that he ſhould be ſo much in the good graces of his fair one, cryed out at this laſt witticiſm, "By'r lady, if I was in your place, I would "ſue the country, as your loſs happened "between ſun and ſun; but I ſuppoſe "you don't value it much, as you took "ſo little care on't; for I ſee no fire-arms "the young gentlewoman has, not I." "No!" replied the enamorator, "who "can ſtand the ſhock of ſuch brilliant "eyes?" and to ſpeak the truth, this laſt compliment had made them ſparkle at a great rate, when unhappily the old lady's ill-natured cough, by waking her, put an end to his flattery, and the triumph of Miſs Fanny her grand-daughter: the motherly gentlewoman, aſked Miſs if ſhe was not

not a hungry, and would eat a bit of cake. As this was ſpoke in a manner that made her appear very much of the child, it greatly offended her fancied womanhood, and ſhe replied in a tone of peviſhneſs, "Laud, Madam, you would have one a "baby for ever, I think, I can't be al- "ways a ſtuffing, not I, why ſhould I be "more hungry then the reſt of the com- "pany?" "Dear Miſs Pert," returned her careful grand-mother, "you are hard- "ly out of your bib and apron, and you "are above being thought a child; this "comes of your mother's letting you "read filthy romances; but ſhe brings "you up according to her own heart: "and your poor father muſt ſubmit to "her humour for quietneſs ſake." "Yes, "Madam," replied the young lady, "and "for the ſake of ſharing in my mamma's "fortune." "Fortune!" repeated the old lady, "my poor ſon had better have "bought his wife cloaths to her back,---- "but I beg pardon of the company for "diſturbing them with the concerns of "my family. The little pert ſlut has "put me beſide all patience. We ſhall "have her by and by plague ſome ho- "neſt man's heart out, becauſe ſhe'll "bring him a fortune, forſooth."

THE laſt words ſeemed to be eagerly liſtened to by the three young men, who, tho' they differed as much as poſſible in every other particular, probably agreed in this, that no wrong turn of education, no unhappy family broils were of any weight, when gold, all-powerful gold bore down the adverſe ſcale.

THE apothecary had ſpoke little hitherto, but had very genteely amuſed himſelf in turning over ſome tattered leaves of an old lexicon, which probably had been deſigned for a viler uſe; but as he plainly ſaw he ſhould be expoſed to no diſagreeable queſtions from any of his preſent companions, he indulged his vanity, by raiſing, as he imagined, their ideas of his profound learning: however, on the firſt hint he received, that Miſs Fanny was worth purſuit, he pocketed his papers, and with great readineſs anſwered the old woman's interrogatories; informed her what he thought moſt uſeful in convulſions, the chin-cough, and chil-blains, and, to the mortification of Betty Barnes, uttered many impertinencies, which, tho' they might be neceſſary enough in a ſick chamber, were far from being proper in a ſtage-coach, while the aukward excuſes he made, on ſeeing her bluſh for what he called the privilege of his profeſſion,

encreaſed her confuſion, as it gave an opportunity to the baronet's laced domeſtic, with an impudent ſtare to ſay, "How "happy are you bolus-mungers to be "ſo intimate with the concerns of the "ladies!"

AT the inn where they ſtopped for dinner, Betty, in paſſing through the houſe, heard the landlord aſk his wife for ſome money, ſaying with a laugh, "The town ſharpers have been too many for young Mr. Timothy, for all his cun-"ning. He ſays he has loſt his watch. The "old man will be ſtark wild when he "knows it." As this was a convincing proof of the young fellow's prudence and great regard to truth, Betty did not fail to remember it, that ſhe might have it in her power to put a ſtop to any future parade of ſelf-ſufficiency.

AT this place the men all ſhewed their gallantry, in offering to pay the whole expence; but this was objected to by the old lady and Betty Barnes, as there was an equal number of both ſexes.

THE reckoning being diſcharged, they again crammed the coach, and drove at a furious rate, till they came near the place where they were to lie, in which dwelt the father of the wiſe Mr. Timothy, who came a little way out of the town to meet his

his hopeful ſon. As ſoon as the frugal old gentleman ſaw him, he with ſome anger in his countenance cried, "Why this "extravagance lad? was not the outſide "of the coach good enough for you now, "as well as when you went up. And "your Sunday coat on too. Ah boy, boy, "my mind miſgives me that you are not "a whit better than your brother Dick, "tho' you kept ſuch a coil about his "ſpending laſt year."

This rough welcome interrupted the young man in the midſt of a ſpeech he was making to Miſs Fanny, about his being the favourite ſon of his ever honoured faither, who he thanked God was very well to paſs, and able to ſettle him in the world. The poor culprit ſeemed quite confounded at his father's ſpeech, as it no doubt gave him but a diſagreeable foretaſte of what he muſt expect, when the loſs of his watch, and his contracting a debt ſhould come to be known. However, as the coach drove too faſt for the old man to keep pace with it, he was not at that time obliged to anſwer, and as ſoon as he came to the inn, he made haſte home, probably to ſpare himſelf the diſagreeable mortification of being again reprimanded before thoſe who had been witneſs to his violent airs of importance.

## CHAP. V.

A ſmall miſtake, the cauſe of much confuſion among the travellers.

BETTY, as ſhe had been ſo rudely expoſed in her firſt journey, had no extraordinary liking to lie alone in the chamber of an inn, ſhe therefore deſired the old lady to permit her to be in the ſame room with her and Miſs Fanny, to which ſhe conſented, tho' pretty Miſs ſhewed viſible diſſatisfaction, and ſaid with much diſdain, that ſhe did not know that it was better to travel in a coach than a waggon, if people muſt be ſtuffed together with two or three beds in a room. As the young lady had behaved with no manner of haughtineſs in the time they had been together, but had made uſe of Betty Barnes to ſhew, by converſing with her, her prodigious wit to the gentlemen, as the preſence of her grandmother prevented her addreſſing herſelf immediately to them, ſhe therefore had not the leaſt expectation of an oppoſition on her part: however, ſhe was not long at a loſs to gueſs the motive of this newly aſſumed pride.

WHILE the good old lady was preparing for bed, Miſs Fanny was curling her hair;

hair; but no ſooner was ſhe laid down, than ſhe recollected that ſhe had taken her night-cap out of her pocket in the room where they ſupped, and ran haſtily down ſtairs as if to look for it. The poor gentlewoman was in mortal apprehenſions at her long ſtay, and at laſt earneſtly deſired Betty to go and ſee for her; but as ſhe was convinced that the night-cap was only a pretence to gain a private interview with her gay fellow-traveller; ſhe made no great haſte to obey her injunctions: however, on her repeating her intreaties ſhe went down, but with no deſign to interrupt them, probably that ſhe might not draw on herſelf the ſeverity of Miſs Fanny's flippant tongue; or perhaps in compliance with the golden rule of doing as ſhe would be done by.

On her going down ſtairs, ſhe was met by the young doctor, who, as her candle had been blown out by the wind of a back-door that ſtood open at the bottom of the ſtair-caſe, took her for one of the ſervants of the inn, and pulling her rudely, cried, "Ah ha, have I caught you? "I'll trouble my head no more about "the coxcomb. If you'll make me hap-"py, he may run away with the girl an "he will." Betty without ſpeaking,

ſtruggled to get looſe, when Miſs Fanny and her lover, who had entered by the garden-door, came up ſtairs, Miſs as ſhe paſſed by, crying, "Lard I was bewitched "ed to come down I think! what can I "ſay to grand-mamma, and that demure "thing that came in the coach with us. "They'll think ſtrange things of me to "be ſure; but remember to get the good-"will of my mamma's maid, and then I "don't care a fig what ſhe can ſay."

ON this ſhe aſcended the ſtairs, but the enamoured lover, eager to ſnatch a parting kiſs, followed her to the place where Betty Barnes and the apothecary ſtood, and catching hold, as he thought, of his miſtreſs's habit, ſeized the young doctor by his camblet ſurtout, and imprinted on his lips ſeveral kiſſes, before the roughneſs of his beard diſcovered his miſtake. During this amorous ſcuffle, Miſs Fanny ſlipped into a chamber, which was in perfect ſtillneſs, except a ſmall ſnoring, which ſhe had the pleaſure of believing, was a proof that her grandmother and the grave girl, whoſe obſervation ſhe dreaded, were faſt aſleep.

SHE was almoſt undreſſed, when there entered a drunken officer, lighted by a maid ſervant, whom he was ſtrongly perſuading to become his bedfellow.

As Miſs Fanny had nothing on but her ſhift, and a white under-petticoat, ſhe was almoſt as much frighted as the maid, who, on ſight of her, gave a great ſcream, while the gentleman ſwearing that he believed the devil was in the houſe, ſtaggered towards the bed, which the young lady ran from in great terror.

The noiſe waked two old gentlemen, who lay in the next room, from whence ſhe had heard the ſnoring, and the voice of Miſs Fanny had reached the ears of the old lady her grandmother, who increaſed the din, by a hideous outcry. Betty Barnes, who had alſo taken the advantage of her lover's new engagement to get into her chamber, had till ſhe heard the ſcream, been diverting herſelf with the rencounter between the vallet and the doctor, whom ſhe heard roll each other down ſtairs, but ſuppoſed had got no hurt, as this accident was followed by a loud augh.

The noiſe of this tumble had prevented the old lady from hearing Betty enter, which pleaſed her, as ſhe could not have been able to have given her much ſatisfaction, in relation to her volatile charge; but the ſquall of the maid, the ſhriek of the half naked girl, the "Fy upon it "Sir," of the old gentleman, and the

lamentable cries of the venerable old lady, quickly baniſhed her mirth, which was ſucceeded by an univerſal trembling; when, to the encreaſe of her fright, there burſt into the room the landlord of the houſe, two men in their ſhirts, Miſs Fanny crying, and the rough ſoldier holding both her hands.

THE old gentlewoman was ſitting not much better cloathed than the young one, on the ſide of the bed, from which thro' age and ſurprize ſhe was unable to riſe; but on the ſight of her grand-daughter, and the man who held her, ſhe behaved like one half diſtracted, not doubting, as ſhe ſaid, but her poor child, her innocent lamb, was raviſhed, was diſpoiled and ruined; but ſhe would have juſtice if there was any law in England; however, notwithſtanding her heat, ſhe was ſoon perſuaded to believe, that this uproar had been only the conſequence of the young lady's miſtaking her room, and going into that prepared for the officer. At laſt, every one departed to their ſeveral beds, and a ſervant having brought Miſs Fanny's cloaths into her own chamber, the reſt of the night paſſed in perfect tranquillity.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VI.

Miſs Fanny much altered for the better by her laſt night's fright, entertains her fellow-travellers with a ſhort ſtory.

THE next morning they roſe early to perſue their journey; but the young lady did not ſeem near ſo alert as the day before. It was in vain that the glittering lover put on his ſprightly airs, ſhe was quite inſenſible to his tinſel, or his charms: his cowardice in not coming to her aſſiſtance the night before, cured her of her infant paſſion, and as her terror had made her ſee her raſhneſs, in flying from the protection of her careful parent, and the folly of meeting one who was almoſt a ſtranger, and as it had a little mortified her unbounded deſire of admiration, a too common fault of the gay and ſprightly, ſhe could now talk like a reaſonable creature, and, conſidering her years, appeared to have an uncommon ſhare of ſenſe. Her fond grand-mamma, pleaſed at the ſobriety of her behaviour, and glad to ſee her free from the petulant airs ſhe had given herſelf the day before, gave her no uneaſy reprehenſions concern-

ing what had happened at the inn, ſo by degrees her chagrin wore off.

THE converſation at firſt turned on Mr. Timothy's wife father, who had taken ſuch care to make his ſon appear ridiculous to his fellow-travellers. "I think," ſaid Miſs Fanny, "the old gentleman acts "as if he deſigned his ſon ſhould hate as "well as fear him. I'm ſure, if any one "was to delight in telling me my faults "before folks, they would be far from "making me leave them. Tho' I can "ſee when I am wrong, and be ſorry for "it too, when I hear of it from thoſe "that ſhow their affection as well as their "anger; but of all the puniſhments I "ever met with, I think, I never was ſo "pleaſed with any thing as I was with "what happened to a miſs, when I was "at ſchool. One of the young ladies "had committed a fault, for which the "governeſs corrected her ſeverely; but "that ſhe might not be expoſed to the "banters of her ſchool-fellows, gave her "her puniſhment in her own room when "no body was preſent but one of the "teachers, who told one of the young "ladies with whom ſhe lay, and it quick-"ly went through the houſe.

As

" As this was contrary to the deſign " of our miſtreſs, who often ſaid, that " frequent ſhame hardens the mind, ſhe " made a very ſtrict enquiry who ſpread " the report, which was ſoon traced to " the lady who was the teacher's bed-fel- " low. It was in vain that Miſs pretend- " ed to produce her author, ſhe was ob- " liged to undergo the pain of a whole " day's ſilence; and that the good gentle- " woman might act juſtly without leſſen- " ing the authority of her teacher, by a " publick cenſure of her fault, ſhe en- " joined her to ſee this penance per- " formed, and to ſtay with the lady from " morning till night, without any other " company, and never to ſpeak to her. " This was performed, but the executio- " ner, as indeed it was right ſhe ſhould, " received full as much mortification as " the criminal; for tho' ſhe would in con- " ſideration of its being thro' her means " that the lady was thus ſeverely puniſh- " ed, have remitted part of the penance, " yet as ſhe had already given ſuch a proof " of her diſpoſition to tattle, the young " lady wiſely reſolved not to truſt her."

Miss Fanny's little ſtory pleaſed and diverted her companions, and they all, except the lover, grew ſociable and entertaining; but the ſettled contempt with

which his miſtreſs ſurveyed him, and the doctor's ſpightfully aſking him, how he found his ſhoulder, was too much for his patience; he therefore bluntly replied, that if he provoked him, he ſhould feel that it had not loſt its ſtrength. This menace, when pent up in a coach with three women, appeared ſo ridiculous, that Miſs Fanny, with a ſarcaſtic laugh, cried out, "That's a doughty knight indeed, who "will drub a man when he refuſes to "reſcue a diſtreſſed damſel: but don't "mind him, Sir, I'll venture to be your "ſecond, when he has the courage to "challenge you." As this ſpeech was ſpoke with a ſmile to the doctor, it did not fail to make him appear ridiculous in his turn; for as he fancied, that to ingratiate himſelf with the young lady, he had little elſe to do, than make the baronet's neceſſary man appear contemptible, he treated him unmercifully: however, after a few hot words from his adverſary, and a reproof from the lady, in which ſhe told him, that ſhe thought he had no great reaſon to boaſt of his attachment to the fair, ſince their cries had not the power to awake either his curioſity or courage, ſo far as to endanger his own perſon, he appeared a good deal humbled, and notwithſtanding the old lady ſlept, the girl behaved

behaved in a manner quite unexceptionable. Betty Barnes and ſhe grew extremely intimate: very poſſibly Miſs ſuſpected, as ſhe found her up when ſhe came into her own room, that ſhe was acquainted with her imprudence, in meeting a young fellow whom ſhe had known but one day, and imagined, that the beſt way to prevent her from receiving any mortifications on that account, would be to put ſome confidence in her, and to treat her on a level. Had Miſs Fanny had the advantage of years and experience, ſhe could not have acted more juſtly, as nothing provokes malevolence ſo certainly as the diſparity of the object by which it is excited, eſpecially if there ſeems to be a high ſenſe of that diſparity; for which reaſon I believe, no one paſſion of the human mind, ſo fooliſhly ſubverts its own gratification as pride. How many ſevere ſarcaſms would the beauty eſcape, if ſhe did not ſet ſo great a value on her charms? how might the wealthy conſole themſelves in their caſh, if they did not by a ſupercilious diſdain of the needy, ſet the world on enquiring from whence came their muſhroom greatneſs? As I think it a great ſign of the writers having ſome of the vice I am condemning, to dare to obtrude on the world, what he aſks

pardon

pardon for in almoſt the ſame ſentence, I will ſuppoſe the reader not offended by the reflexion, and proceed.

AT the end of this day's journey, they loſt the young lady's couragious lover, who received orders at the inn to attend his maſter the next morning; he would very fain have engaged Miſs Fanny in a private converſation; but ſhe prudently declined it, and even told him, that he need not trouble himſelf concerning the perſon ſhe ſpoke about, ſince ſhe had a mortal averſion to a man who wanted ſpirit. This was, ſhe thought, quite unintelligible to any but him ſhe ſpoke to, as the other gentleman was out of hearing; to this he only anſwered, that the damned quack, he ſuppoſed, had ſpirit enough for the lady, and then left her.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VII.

A perſon already mentioned, ſupplies the place of Miſs Fanny's glittering lover, who entirely cures her of her coquetry and affectation, by inſpiring her with more tender ſenſations. The gentleman tells his ſtory, which leads to an agreeable diſcovery.

THE next morning, on their going to the coach, they found the place of the quondam vallet filled by the very officer who had put poor Miſs Fanny in ſuch cruel apprehenſions the firſt night of the journey. He had had a fall from his horſe the day before, in which he was much bruiſed, and therefore choſe to alter his method of travelling. The poor girl on her going into the coach bluſhed extreamly, and appeared under great confuſion; but the gentleman ſoon diſſipated her uneaſineſs, by the many apologies he made for his own brutality, in uſing her ſo roughly: at the ſame time acknowledging, that he had no other excuſe to make for his conduct, but that he had been weak enough to let an enemy into his head, that had ſtole away his brains: this little theft from the inimitable Shakeſpear,

ſpear, gave Miſs and Betty Barnes a good deal of diverſion, as the old lady ſeemed very much pleaſed with it, and very ſagely obſerved, that it was a thouſand pities that a gentleman who was capable of ſo wiſe a remark, ſhould ever give occaſion for it in his own perſon. "Dear Madam," returned the gentleman, "you do me too "much honour, in thinking the remark "mine, ſince I am indebted for it to one "of the greateſt genius's that ever lived." The good lady replied, "that he deſer-"ved praiſe for the choice of his books; "for in this depraved age," added ſhe, "one hardly finds a young man that "reads any thing but plays and roman-"ces, ſtuff that corrupts the heart and "the morals."

THE officer ſmiled at the compliment, but left the good gentlewoman in her ignorance of his author, ſince he ſhould run the hazard of loſing her good opinion by undeceiving her. They ſpent the day very agreeably, and the old lady let her grandaughter talk without interruption, as ſhe had not the leaſt dread of danger from her acquaintance with a perſon who made ſo prudent a choice of his amuſements, and who was in reality a man of good ſenſe. Miſs Fanny, as they grew more intimate by degrees, became thoughtful,

and

and loſt every air of affected ſuperiority: ſhe even made a ſacrifice of her vanity, and took more pains, that a brilliant expreſſion of the officer's ſhould not paſs unnoticed, than to ſhew her own wit. The gentleman in his turn, appeared much pleaſed with her, tho' he did not ſeem to have the leaſt deſign of inſpiring her with love. The only compliment that could be called particular, at once quaſhed every hope that ſhe might conceive of his becoming her admirer. It was a wiſh that her he was deſtined to marry, might poſſeſs half her charms. The old lady then ſaid, that ſhe ſuppoſed he was going to be married to one whom his friends had provided for him, to which he replied in the affirmative. This declaration threw Miſs Fanny almoſt into a fainting fit, which ſhe endeavoured to conceal, by complaining, that riding backward made her ſick, and begging Betty to change places with her. The young captain appeared affected at her change of temper, which he perhaps attributed to the right cauſe, tho' he ſhewed no unmanly triumph, or over-weening ſelf-conceit; but ſeemed rather to wiſh her return of cheerfulneſs, notwithſtanding her melancholy undoubtedly flattered his ſelf-love.

THE old gentlewoman was impertinently inquiſitive in regard to the gentleman's family and circumſtances; at leaſt Betty Barnes thought ſo, who was at that time unacquainted with the reaſon of her aſking ſo many queſtions; however he anſwered her with great good nature: he told her that his father was the younger brother of a good family in the north of England, that he marrying a Portugueze lady, by her perſuaſions turned Roman catholic, and afterwards ſettled at Liſbon, where he had another ſon beſides himſelf, and ſeveral daughters. As his father had great ſucceſs in the profeſſion of a merchant, he grew ambitious of raiſing a family that might vie in grandeur with that of his elder brother in England, and as the beſt means to promote that deſign, according to the cruel cuſtom of the country where he reſided, placed ſeveral of his daughters in convents, and deſigned his youngeſt ſon, which was the captain, for the army: but as he was yet unfit for the rough diſcipline of war, he was ſuffered to remain at home with his elder brother and ſiſter. During this interval, his father's brother's ſon, being on his travels, paid them a viſit.

"THIS young gentleman," continued the captain, "was a man of ſobriety and "virtue; yet my father, a very great bi-"got to his religion, often mentioned "to me, as my couſin and I were ex-"treamly intimate, how very meritori-"ous it would be to ſnatch him from the "jaws of hell, by making a convert of "him to the true church. As this was "very frequently inculcated, I began in "earneſt a work I thought ſo accept-"able to God; but my poor father ſaw "all his hopes diſappointed; for inſtead "of convincing him of error, he baffled "all my arguments, and removed every "prejudice of education; even while I "endeavoured to confute his reaſoning, "my heart aſſented to the force of truth. "In this ſituation of mind, I made my "couſin my confident, who promiſed to "aſk my uncle, his father, to try all his "intereſt to prevail with my parents, to "ſuffer me to return his viſit. His de-"ſign was ſucceſsful, and I was permit-"ed to return with him into England, "where I have been near nine years. "My uncle took on himſelf the trouble "of informing my father of my change "of ſentiments, for which he received no "other thanks than being vilified and "abuſed, as the deſtroyer of his child,

"who,

" who, he ſaid, was betrayed to everlaſt-
" ing perdition. In anſwer to a letter I
" ſent him, in which I expreſſed the warm-
" eſt ſenſe of duty, he told me, that he
" looked on me as an out-caſt from his
" family, and would never more hold any
" intercourſe with me, except he was
" aſſured I had renounced my hereſy.
" As I was deprived of all reſource from
" my parents, my uncle very kindly pro-
" vided for me, and before I had been
" two years in England, got me a poſt
" in the army, which I have lately diſ-
" poſed of, ſo that captain is now only
" my travelling name, as Gibbet ſays."

" THEN I hope, Sir," ſaid Miſs Fanny, her eyes ſparkling with pleaſure, " that
" your father is reconciled, notwithſtand-
" ing his heat; for if this was not the
" caſe, you would hardly have parted
" with your commiſſion." " He has
" promiſed me his future favour, but it
" is on ſuch hard conditions," returned the captain with a ſigh, and a tender glance at the young lady, " that I know
" not whether I ſhall accept it." " Why,
" I hope," ſaid the old lady with much concern, " you'll not turn apoſtate for a
" fortune." " No, no, Madam," replied the gentleman, " I am only to
" marry where I ſhall, I fear, have much

" ado

" ado to love. In ſhort, my elder bro-
" ther is dead, and my father having no
" other ſon but myſelf, has abated ſome-
" thing of his rigour, and offered me a for-
" tune, if I will conſent to marry a young
" lady, who I am informed, is as very a
" coquette as beauty, and fifteen can
" make her. I have not ſeen her yet,
" but it is to her father's houſe I am now
" bound, where, if I find nothing but a
" beautiful out-ſide to engage my atten-
" tion, I am determined again to become
" the ſoldier of fortune. For I think no
" employ in the ſervice of my king, can
" be half ſo diſgraceful as a mean pre-
" tence to a paſſion where the heart is
" indifferent, or pre-engaged."

THIS laſt was ſpoke with a viſible con-cern in his look and accent, and ſeemed addreſſed to Miſs Fanny, who whiſpered ſomething to her grand-mamma, with a good deal of emotion: to which the old lady very calmly replied, " Very like ſo," and immediately aſked the gentleman if it was in this part of the country where he was to ſee his miſtreſs. He told her, that he expected to ſee her in two days, and was already related to her; for ſhe was the daughter of his own aunt, who lived at the town where the ſtage puts up, " and " her name, " returned Miſs Fanny, " is " Wilcox,

"Wilcox, I thought I had heard ſome-
"thing of the ſtory." "On my life,
"Madam, you're right," replied the gen-
tleman, "but I hope you will not ac-
"quaint the lady, how free I have made
"with her faults." "No, no," ſhe re-
joined bluſhing, "I ſhall hardly mention
"it, tho' I ſhall take care not to forget
"the reproof."

The old lady now unable longer to contain herſelf, cryed out, "Well, well, "I find the truth will out, this girl here "is Mr. Wilcox's daughter, and was "ſent for from ſchool, as far as I can "find, for no other reaſon but to ſee her "couſin, who, I am glad to find, is ſo "compleat a gentleman. Tho' if my "advice was to be of any weight, I "ſhould endeavour that ſhe ſhould have "a few more years over her head, be-"fore ſhe entered into the cares of life."

This ſpeech ſeemed but little attended to by either the young lady or the captain, who both appeared loſt in thought, eſpecially Miſs Fanny, who was covered with confuſion, and betrayed her tenderneſs, by attempting to conceal it. At laſt the lover brought out, "And are you "really the lady I dreaded to ſee, for "fear I ſhould not be able to love? I "was in terror at the thoughts of a made

"up

" up match, as I have ſo often ſeen the " unhappy conſequences of them among " my friends; but my good fortune has " diſſipated all my fears, by bringing to " my ſight the dear creature, who can " alone make me happy, and at the ſame " time, reinſtate me in my father's fa- " vour."

As this was ſpoke in an accent extreamly paſſionate, and attended with a ſeizure of one of Miſs Fanny's hands, which the lover ſtrenuouſly held between both his, the poor young lady was quite confounded at what would probably have given her great pleaſure, had it happened without witneſſes. However, ſhe withdrew her hand, and with a pretty good grace cried, " Dear captain, remember " you are not talking to the girl that " lighted you to your chamber t'other " night." This little reproach, tho' it was not ſpoke with the leaſt bitterneſs, gave the lover ſome uneaſineſs, and made him bear his preſent happineſs with more equality of temper. But as this happy rencounter gave a new turn to the converſation, I ſhall here put an end to this chapter.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VIII.

Containing ſome remarks on the tender affection of thoſe parents, who becauſe they cannot make their children as happy as they wiſh, render them as miſerable as they can.

THE gentleman who had ſo unexpectedly met with his intended bride in the exultation of his heart, at his eſcape from a wife where his mind had no attachment, now exclaimed at the folly of thoſe parents who force their children to be ſplendidly miſerable, when the good old lady, full of a mother's fondneſs for her only ſon, whom ſhe fancied unhappy, becauſe he had married a lady of a different way of thinking from her own, ſighing, replied, "People blame parents, and "parents; but for my part, I don't ſee "but that young folks make themſelves "miſerable as often as their fathers and "mothers do it for them." Miſs replied, that nothing ſhould force her to marry a man ſhe could not like; for if ſhe muſt be unhappy, it ſhould be to pleaſe herſelf, and not to humour other people; and added, that by what little ſhe had ſeen, it was more to ſatisfy their own obſti-

obſtinate humour, than any regard to their children's real good, that made parents contradict their inclinations, ſince if it was out of a concern for their welfare, they would not be ſo apt to increaſe their misfortunes, by a rigorous reſentment, when the imprudent ſtep could not be recalled; "for," ſhe continued, "I don't remember that I ever heard an irreconcileable "father alledge, that he puniſhes to prevent other people's children from being ſeduced by the bad example, yet "I think, this is ſaid to be the only juſt "deſign of puniſhment." "Ah," cried the old lady, "'tis a ſign you know nothing of the pain, and carking care "that affects a mother's heart, by your "talking ſo much at eaſe. You think it "nothing to have every expectation blaſted. Parents, it ſeems, are to have no "will of their own; but dutifully to acquieſce in the wiſe choice of their children: nay, I ſhan't wonder at any thing "I hear in this diſcerning age. I ſuppoſe "we ſhall by and by have a law to knock "old people on the head, for being ſo "unmannerly as to live longer than they "ought."

As ſhe ſpoke this with ſome heat as well as peeviſhneſs, the young lady's lover replied in the moſt reſpectful manner, that he believed no mind that was not

wholly abandoned, could harbour a thought that could give the leaſt ground for ſuch a ſatire. "I dare ſay, Madam," he continued, "old age would in general meet "with reverence and reſpect, did it not "too much encroach on the prerogatives "of youth; but I can ſee no cauſe that "ſhould hinder a young fellow from "apeing the grave wiſdom and autho-"rity of his ſire, when the old gentle-"man himſelf deſcends to the ſprightly "follies of youth. Every age has its "boundaries, and I think it full as ridi-"culous, to ſee an old lady in the high "head and large hoop of her grand-"daughter, as it would be to have the "young one become a bride, in a white "frock and hanging-ſleeves; but when "theſe improprieties come to actions of "importance, it is ſtill worſe. I have "known a good gentlewoman, who, in-"fluenced by her care for the morals of "her child, has debarred her with the "greateſt ſtrictneſs from reading all works "of invention, yet, when by the girl's "infringement of her commands, chance "has thrown in the old lady's way, a "novel or a play, which Miſs has bor-"rowed of ſome acquaintance, ſhe has, "with all the eagerneſs of youth, ſpectacled "the performance, till ſhe has gone thro'

"it.

" it. I remember a trick her daughter " played her, that diverted me much, as " I was at that time but a *younker*. Her " mother had, in going thro' a large vo- " lume of plays, found ſome obnoxious " paſſages, which ſhe doubled down with " great care to ſhew a grave relation, " for whom Miſs had ſome eſteem, and " in order to ſecure the book till ſhe " was ready to pay him a viſit, clapped " it under the cuſhion of the chair where " ſhe ſat, exclaiming with great bitter- " neſs, that Mr. Johnſon ſhould ſee how " prettily ſhe ſpent her time. When " they were in the coach, going to the " gentleman, in order to make this mor- " tifying diſcovery, as Miſs appeared " out of humour, her good mamma, " who loved on theſe occaſions, to exert " her power of giving pain, reſolved to " turn over the offenſive book; but be- " hold it was changed into a volume of " devotions, of about the ſame ſize as " that of the plays, which the cunning " gipſey had put in its place, on her " mamma's riſing to receive a morning " viſiter."

This little trifling tale diverted Miſs Fanny extreamly, and gave her a flow of vivacity that beguiled the tedioufneſs of the way, and would have been quite

entertaining, had it not been for an unhappy diſpoſition in her grandmother, to ſee offence where none was meant. The young doctor, with a ſolemnity quite unſuitable to his time of life, gave his opinion with the ſententious gravity of a real phyſician, when conſulted for the recovery of the ſick, on the ſide of the old lady, that nothing was more inſupportable to a perſon of ſpeculation and genius, than that over-forwardneſs and flipancy of youth which ſhe complained of, and that, for his part, he always choſe the company of thoſe more advanced in years, as thereby he found a greater improvement in knowledge; when Miſs Fanny ſilenced him, by recalling to his memory the incident on the ſtairs, and telling him it was great pity he ſhould ever recede from ſo prudent a practice, ſince thoſe who pretended to be wiſe before their time, were as diſtaſteful and ridiculous to the young and gay, as a ſtringleſs lute, or droneing bagpipe.

THE oddneſs of the compariſon ſet them a laughing, which ſo diſconcerted the poor apothecary, that he ſcarce opened his lips the remaining part of the journey; a circumſtance that afforded relief to Betty Barnes, as he had a good deal peſtered her with prolix compliments on her perſon,

ſon, ever ſince his ſagacity had obſerved the improbability of any ſucceſs with Miſs Fanny, and he had even inſinuated, with the utmoſt ſerioufneſs of countenance, that tho' he frequently preferred the company of the ſtayed and antient, he was far from being an enemy to the delights of youth and love, when he ſaw a girl who did not undo the charms of her eyes, by the glibneſs of her tongue.

As Betty Barnes was wiſe enough to ſee that this was deſigned as much for a fling at the loquacious Miſs Fanny, as a compliment in favour of her ſilence, ſhe felt very little gratitude for his good opinion, and really as much deſpiſed his grave impertinence, as ſhe would have done the trifling fopperies of a more lively fool. Indeed, tho' ſhe had a mind which never admitted the ugly fiend envy to diſturb its peace, ſhe could not reflect on the perfect happineſs ſhe believed Miſs Fanny was going to enjoy, in the poſſeſſion of the man ſhe loved, without comparing hers with her own ſituation, and this compariſon made her in no condition to be pleaſed with any thing that could be offered her from one ſo widely different from him whoſe loſs ſhe lamented. It was theſe gloomy thoughts, together with a conſciouſneſs of the inferiority of

her ſtation, that kept her from joining much in the converſation, and, perhaps, ſome little fear of Miſs Fanny's tart repartees might contribute to her ſilence; however, tho' the character of a wit is far from being pleaſing to thoſe who are confounded by their vivacity, a hint I would have obſerved by all who either have, or aim at that qualification, our good-natured girl heartily wiſhed her every bliſs that her good ſenſe and juſt way of thinking made her capable of enjoying.

## CHAP. IX.

The young lady is met by her father and mother, who exhibit a prepoſterous but common picture, of a hen-pecked huſband, and a termagant wife.

THEY went on the reſt of their journey without any thing remarkable happening among them, till they came to alight for dinner the laſt day. Here they were met by Miſs Fanny's mamma and papa. The gentleman, who was the firſt that came into the room, embraced the young lady with much ſeeming affection, and was juſt going to pay a dutiful ſalutation to the old lady his mother, when, at the appearance of his

his ſpouſe, it dwindled into a cold compliment. The lady, with an air which had a good deal more of the fine woman than the affectionate parent, enquired after Miſs's health, and expreſſed an uneaſy kind of wonder at her prodigious growth. Miſs Fanny returned both to her papa and mamma anſwers, that ſhewed an unaffected tenderneſs, but unhappily in the expreſſion of her fondneſs, calling her mother dear mamma, ſhe received a rebuke from that fine lady, who, with eyes fixed on her daughter's future ſpouſe, whom ſhe had not yet recollected, ſaid, ſhe thought Mrs. Higgins her teacher, had by this time broke her of the ugly cuſtom which her father had indulged her in, and that ſhe expected ſhe would treat her with more reſpect.

THIS unexpected and unſeaſonable rebuff, put the poor young lady in ſome confuſion, which being obſerved by the father, he ſaid to his lady, "I wonder, "my dear, you will take offence at the "poor child for ſuch trifles." "And I "wonder, Sir," was returned in a moſt haughty tone, "that you ſhould take on "you to direct me; if I had let her been "under your care, ſhe would, I ſuppoſe, "by this time have been fit for ſome hog-

" driver; but tho' I am unhappily buried " in the country, I ſhould be glad to have " her make a figure in life." " Why, " Madam," returned the huſband, " will " it hinder her making a figure in life, " to call you mother?" " Not quite ſo " much as calling you father would, I " muſt own;" was replied with the moſt arrogant ſelf-ſufficiency of look.

THE old lady, provoked at the indignity with which ſhe thought her ſon treated as well as herſelf, who had only received a ſlight inclination of the head, at her daughter-in-law's entrance, ſaid bluntly, that ſhe hoped ſhe had no reaſon to call any other ſo. This was abundantly ſufficient to inflame the paſſions of this chaſte, this affectionate wife, who exclaimed loudly in defence of her virtue and her fame, which was, ſhe ſaid, hurt by ſuch inſinuations. Tho' ſhe herſelf had taken the beſt way to invite an aſſault, by ſhewing her contempt for her huſband: however, the mother-in-law, who ſaw plainly enough, that her ſon was too much intimidated at his wife's fury to be her champion, condeſcended to appeaſe this wrath, by acknowledging that ſhe had no meaning in what ſhe ſaid; and they paſſed dinner pretty well, except ſome

ſarcaſtick alluſions from the wife, which had a retroſpect to former bickerings, and mean ſubmiſſions.

Miss Fanny, vexed at her mother's behaviour, had privately deſired the captain not to make himſelf known till after dinner, during which time ſhe could not forbear being piqued at ſome advances made him by that lady, which had the effect of rendering her leſs tender, and more capable of behaving with that cool indifference, which, in her mother's opinion, good breeding required; but they had no ſooner dined, than the young gentleman inſtructed by Miſs, who in return for the confuſion ſhe had given her, had a mind to divert herſelf with the embarraſſment of her mother, preſented the lady a letter, in a manner which had ſomething of an air of ſecrecy. She immediately caſt her eyes on her daughter, and obſerving that ſhe took notice of this action, offered to return it, but the gentleman refuſed to take it back, ſaying aloud, "I beg, Madam, "you would read it, ſince your appro-"bation of the propoſal it contains, muſt "alone make my happineſs."

This odd declaration before her huſband had ſomething in it ſo uncommon, that ſhe opened it with a kind of fluttering confuſion, and glancing her eye to the

bottom, beheld her brother's name, on which ſhe held it to her ſpouſe, tho' ſhe had juſt before changed her poſition that he might not read it. The lady, as if unable ſoon to recover herſelf, ſaluted her couſin with a mortified countenance, while the undiſcerning huſband gave him the moſt friendly careſſes, in the midſt of which, the coachman called to his paſſengers to proceed in their journey. As Miſs Fanny's father and mother came in their own coach, they took their daughter with them, and her mamma offered the lover the other empty place; but as there was no room for the old gentlewoman, he choſe to continue in the ſtage, which ſeemed to give her haughty daughter-in-law not a little umbrage. This diſſatisfaction did not eſcape the notice of the too tender old lady, who abſolutely refuſed to enter the coach, ſaying, ſhe would not go into any place where ſhe thought ſhe was not welcome. On this, the lady with an affected toſs, hurried into the coach, crying, "As you pleaſe, Madam, people I "know, don't love to be out of their "element, its poſſible you may prefer a "ſtage." Then ordering the paſſive tool her huſband to ſtep in, and he immediately obeying the command, the coachman drove on, and left both the gentleman

man and her mother to go in that they came in. This mark of diſreſpect ſet the poor old gentlewoman in too great a fret to be concealed, who, as ſoon as they were well ſettled, aſked the officer, if he did not think ſhe had a very dutiful daughter in his aunt. The young gentleman, as he was far from approving her behaviour, had very little to ſay in her defence, only obſerved, that ſhe had been ruffled juſt before, which might be the cauſe of her failing in the deference ſhe owed her, as the mother of her huſband.

"No, no," returned the peeviſh old lady, "ſhe always behaves ſo, I an't good "enough to be treated as her mother, be- "cauſe my huſband was a tradeſman, and "I, like a fool, impoveriſhed myſelf to "make my ſon a more ſuitable match for "her proud ladyſhip, who now ſcorns "me for my weakneſs; but I deſerve it "all, it would not vex me, if my ſon "was but happy; but he, poor man, is "forced to bear with all her humours, be- "cauſe when they were firſt married, he "ruined himſelf to ſupply her vanity, "and is now a contemptible creature, "that owes his maintenance to his wife's "bounty: for her friends have left her a "fortune which he has no concern in; "but that was becauſe ſhe had the ad-

" dreſs to make them believe it was en-
" tirely owing to him, that ſhe was ſtrip-
" ped of that ſhe had at firſt."

THE captain would, without doubt, have been glad to have had the family affairs of his future ſpouſe leſs expoſed; but the old lady had been affronted, and was reſolved to give a looſe to her ſpleen, for ſhe knew ſhe was in no danger of encreaſing her ſon's ſlavery, by giving it vent, as her daughter-in-law would never hear of it, ſhe being, in her own eſteem, in too high a claſs of beings to converſe with ſuch low life creatures as the preſent companions of her mother. The nephew indeed was an exception; but ſhe had, at the firſt of his coming into the coach, conceived an opinion of him that would not ſuffer her to believe him capable of hurting the peace of thoſe who were related to her, whom he was to marry; tho' if ſhe had but thought, ſhe muſt have perceived that very good opinion was a tacit reproach for her own conduct. On the ſame rule of action, or rather, of no rule of action, does ſcandal take air: a lady has more confidence in her friend, than it is plain ſhe deſerves herſelf, at the very inſtant ſhe is truſting her with a ſecret: from hence a gentleman tells his companion of the weakneſs of another

another friend, and cries, " I have too " much eſteem for you, to think you will " open your lips about it to any body:" to which I think, " Why ſhould I keep " mine ſhut, when you can't yours," might be no improper reply.

When they came to the end of their journey, they found Miſs Fanny's father waiting at the inn, to uſher his mother and the captain to his houſe; but as the old gentlewoman was but little pleaſed with the reception ſhe had already met with, he was forced to entreat her with ſome earneſtneſs to accept of the invitation: however, after a few expoſtulations, ſhe went with them, with a reluctance that promiſed very little harmony in the family where ſhe was going.

THE

# THE HISTORY OF BETTY BARNES.

## BOOK V.

### CHAP. I.

Betty meets with ſome ſubjects of mortification; but finds in the perſon of her friend's ſiſter, one to whom ſhe is under great obligations.

BETTY on coming to the houſe of honeſt Joſeph, was received by the good man with much kindneſs, and was perfectly pleaſed with her new companion, his ſiſter. She would now have enjoyed peace and happineſs, had not love, in ſpite of all her endeavours to the contrary, diſturbed her repoſe; however, ſhe had the reſolution to vent her ſighs in ſecret, and to make no one acquainted with her

her pain. But while ſhe was thus endeavouring to conceal her grief, ſhe met with new ſubjects of inquietude.

Our reader may remember, but if not, we ſhall here remind him, that in the beginning of this hiſtory, we mentioned a young lad who lived with Joſeph, and was brother to one of lady Benſon's ſervants. This youth, by his induſtry, became the favourite of his maſter, and notwithſtanding the alteration of Betty's perſon, he ſoon recollected her, and from a knowledge of her birth and circumſtances, began to treat her with a ruſtick freedom, which tho' extreamly diſagreeable, ſhe could not complain of, without incurring the imputation of pride. The eaſy condeſcenſion with which ſhe had been treated by ſeveral with whom ſhe had lived, who, ſuppoſing ſhe had no infamy annexed to the meanneſs of her condition, muſt have been conſidered by her, as greatly her ſuperiors, made his behaviour the more irkſome; but when, by the permiſſion of his maſter, he declared himſelf her lover, ſhe loſt all patience; the wide difference between this clown and her lamented lover, appeared at once to her view, and ſhe anſwered his expreſſions of affection with more aſperity and diſdain, than perhaps became her preſent circumſtances;

ſtances; and on the other hand, the fellow did not fail to reply with equal warmth; for, to ſay the truth, ſhe did not owe this admirer ſo much to the ſtrength of her own charms, which were in a great meaſure eclipſed by a handſome dairy-maid, as to the weight of Joſeph's bags, ſome of which his ſervant imagined would fall to the ſhare of the man who married Betty.

THE farmer was ſoon informed of the pride of his new gueſt, and as he himſelf, when a young man, was in a ſituation not much preferable to that of his ſervant, he was very little pleaſed with the account: however, as he had no intention to force her inclinations, he ſaid nothing to her about it; only ſhe could obſerve, that he ſeemed rather cooler to her than at firſt. This diſlike ſhe ſoon removed, by an earneſt application to the buſineſs of the family; while the ſweetneſs of her temper gained her the affection of all about her, except her rough lover, who could by no means digeſt the mortification he had received, by his meeting with a refuſal, and therefore from a ſpirit of revenge, took every occaſion to remind her of her original meanneſs, and the great goodneſs of his maſter, in putting her on a level with his own ſiſter.

This

This treatment, however humbling, gave her very little concern, as ſhe had the pleaſure of ſeeing him loſe his labour, for neither her old friend Joſeph or this ſiſter, gave much heed to his invectives. The poor woman had ſeen a good deal of the world, and having been long acquainted with miſery, found herſelf in too happy a ſtation to quarrel with her brother, for letting another ſhare in her happineſs: beſides Betty was really a very great favourite, and had no inconſiderable ſhare in her confidence, which was much encreaſed by her having no one but her to converſe with, who underſtood any thing of the ſcenes ſhe had been many years engaged in. Talking one day to this woman, Betty Barnes by accident mentioned the name of Mrs. Milner's daughter, and was ſurprized to find, that her preſent companion was her intimate acquaintance; for as ſhe had only ſpoke of her as the daughter of her miſtreſs, the woman did not imagine that ſhe knew any thing of her infamy; but when Betty aſked her, if ſhe had known Mrs. Danvers too, Mrs. Katherine, for that was the name of Joſeph's ſiſter, would gladly have recalled her words; however, as ſhe thought it would be in vain to endeavour to impoſe

on

on her, ſhe owned her having ſome knowledge of this wicked woman.

THE uneaſineſs which was viſible in Mrs. Katherine's countenance, while ſhe was ſpeaking, made Betty for the preſent repreſs her curioſity, tho' ſhe thought herſelf concerned in the diſcovery; but as they grew more intimate, ſhe learnt all ſhe wiſhed to know. How great was her aſtoniſhment, when ſhe found that Katherine had been her friend before ſhe had ſeen her, and had intereſted herſelf in her happineſs, while ſhe was a perfect ſtranger to her perſon! and how was ſhe amazed, when ſhe diſcovered that ſhe was no other than the poor unhappy creature who lay ſick at the houſe of the horrid wretch in Bridges-ſtreet!

THE knowledge of this ſecret, opened the way for her mentioning Mr. Marſhall, who ſtill employed her thoughts; and the emotion ſhe ſometimes diſcovered, when gratitude made Joſeph's ſiſter grow laviſh in his praiſe, by degrees betrayed her own ſecret. This mutual confidence rendered them extreamly dear to each other. Betty now ſaw the ſincerity of her repentance, in her piety, the decency of her behaviour, and the regularity of her life, and therefore looked upon her with as much com-

complacency as if ſhe had never offended: while ſhe, in her turn, ſtood acquitted in the mind of Katherine, who before had blamed her for the refuſal ſhe had given to the ploughman. Pleaſed with the converſation of this female friend, and more at eaſe, by opening her heart to her, Betty began to reliſh the quiet ſweets of a rural life, and had conceived hopes of being in time able to conquer a fruitleſs paſſion, which had been to her the ſource of great uneaſineſs: but alas! ſhe ſoon ſaw the vanity of theſe hopes. An accidental interview with Mr. Marſhall revived every intendering ſenſation; but this meeting, and its unhappy conſequences ſhall be the ſubject of the next chapter.

## CHAP. II.

### A happy incident, followed by ſome very diſagreeable conſequences.

JOSEPH, in order to divert his ſiſter, took her and her companion to the races, which were at that time about fifteen miles diſtant from his village. As this was a ſight that was quite new to Betty Barnes, ſhe was much pleaſed with it; but her delight was of a ſhort continuance.

WHEN the ſport was over, ſhe was taken up with the prodigious appearance of nobility and gentry with which ſhe was ſurrounded, when ſhe beheld Mr. Marſhall, riding by the ſide of a chariot, in which was placed an old gentleman, and a very young lady. His aſſiduity to the lady, gave Betty intolerable pain; ſhe now thought nothing could give her relief, but endeavouring to conceal her uneaſineſs, ſhe enquired of Joſeph if he knew who that old gentleman was; but the farmer could give her very little ſatisfaction, and could only inform her, that the young lady was juſt married, and that ſhe was the daughter of a gentleman who had a ſeat in that neighbourhood. This ſeemed a confirmation of all her fears, and cauſed a change of countenance, that was taken notice of by her friend, who was not at all at a loſs to gueſs the cauſe; for ſhe had obſerved Mr. Marſhall before he had been ſeen by Betty, tho' ſhe had not told her, for fear it might give her pain. Betty begged her companion to haſten their return, leſt ſhe ſhould be obſerved by Mr. Marſhall; but her care was now too late: he caſt a glance at her, juſt as ſhe was turning her horſe from the place where ſhe had ſeen him, and galloped up to her with a rapidity that ſtartled her.

As

As Betty Barnes was not at all prepared for this interview, it was ſome time before ſhe could recollect herſelf enough to intreat him to leave her, and return to his lady, who, ſhe ſaid, would certainly be offended at his leaving her. This was no place to come to an explanation in, and therefore after having aſſured her in the ſolemneſt manner, that he was yet unmarried, he begged to be informed where he might ſee her: when Mrs. Katherine obſerving her at a loſs for a reply, very kindly invited him to her brother's. My readers may remember that this woman was under many obligations to the young gentleman, ſhe therefore eagerly embraced this firſt opportunity of ſhewing her gratitude, and at the ſame time, promoting, as ſhe thought, the happineſs of her young companion, who, tho' ſhe often profeſſed that ſhe thought no longer of Mr. Marſhall as a lover, had given her by the confuſion ſhe had ſhewn at the firſt ſight of that gentleman, ſome reaſon to doubt the ſincerity of thoſe profeſſions.

Mr. Marſhall needed no entreaties to follow the dictates of his own heart; his couſin Glanville had by his marriage with Miſs Stevens, ſufficiently explained the reaſon of his viſits at that lady's lodgings, and had effectually cured him of his jealouſy

louſy on his account; he had therefore impatiently longed to be reconciled to his dear Betty, but believing ſhe went into the country only to avoid him, he began to accuſe her of ingratitude, and was determined if poſſible to forget her: but the unexpected ſight of this lovely girl, awoke every tender idea, and informed him in one and the ſame moment, that he neither could forget nor was forgotten: for while ſhe was deſiring him to return to his wife, the ſudden change of Betty's face, from extream red to extream pale, told him the ſtrong agitations with which her heart was affected, and made him believe that ſhe had a ſuſpicion of his being already married.

THE following day he came to the houſe of honeſt Joſeph, and was ſoon conducted to the ſight of his miſtreſs, who was already too much prepoſſeſſed in his favour, to doubt his ſincerity. He now owned his cauſeleſs jealouſy, and apologized for it from the exceſs of his love, and the great opinion he had of the influence of her charms. In ſhort, this young couple felt all the ſweets of reconcilement, and perhaps owed to events that threatened a total ſeparation, ſome of the moſt endearing moments they had ever known.

UN-

UNHAPPILY Mr. Marſhall was attended in this viſit by the very fellow who had followed Betty and her companion from Vaux-hall, and had ſeen her enter the houſe of the infamous wretch in Bridges-ſtreet; he had likewiſe ſeen Joſeph's ſiſter ſpeak to his maſter as ſhe came out of the ſpunging-houſe, and as he was among the retinue which followed the lady's chariot to the races, he alſo obſerved Mr. Marſhall ſpeak to them there. He knew Betty Barnes immediately; for he had, though unknown to his maſter, ſeen her often, ſince from the firſt moment of his being truſted, he had fancied himſelf worthy of his maſter's unreſerved confidence, and as Mr. Marſhall did not ſeem to have ſo high a ſenſe of his merit, he had endeavoured to gain by induſtry a knowledge of his ſecrets, and to that end had watched him narrowly; he therefore knew of his being very frequently in appearance his equal, and gueſſed the motive of his diſguiſe. Intereſt indeed had hitherto kept him ſilent; for Mr. Marſhall was one of the beſt of maſters: but tho' he had well rewarded his diligence and ſecrecy, he did not chuſe to become his ſlave, by putting an affair on which he thought all his happineſs depended, too much in his power.

This fellow was regaled by the clown, who had courted Betty Barnes, and who, while the lovers were enjoying the delights of reconcilement, from a motive of envy and hatred, informed him with much ſpite, that the wench his maſter had ſo much demeaned himſelf in coming to ſee, was a baſtard, and was now kept out of charity. The ſervant, in order to make ſome return for this intelligence, told him what he perhaps believed to be true, that he fancied, if the truth was known, young as ſhe was, ſhe had been a whore; for ſhe had once lived in a bawdy-houſe, as well as the woman who juſt went out of the room, who tho' he did not know her yeſterday when ſhe was dreſt, he now, he ſaid, remembered to be a poor creature whom his maſter took out of a ſpunging-houſe. I wondered then, " added he, " what could be the reaſon of his having " any thing to ſay to ſuch a wretch; for " ſhe looked as if ſhe would ſink into " the earth; but I now ſee plainly enough, " that it was not meer charity that made " him give her ſo much money. I have " often puzzled my brains about it; but " murder will out at laſt. If ſhe had " not known this girl, I ſuppoſe ſhe " might have rotted in a priſon for him; " but if my maſter had thought fit to

" have

" have truſted me, I could have helped " him to a ſight of this girl much cheaper."

He received very little interruption from the ploughman during this harangue: for the fellow liſtened with a malicious joy that kept him ſilent; but his taciturnity continued no longer than till Mr. Marſhall, by going away, gave him an opportunity to vent his ſpite, at the expence of poor Betty, and his maſter's unhappy ſiſter. While on the other hand, Mr. Marſhall's ſervant, made bold by his having long had a ſecret of his maſter's in his poſſeſſion, with very little caution related all he had heard.

The lover, provoked at the fellow's audacity, and without conſidering the conſequences, inſtantly diſcharged him. He in vain pleaded to ſtay; but at laſt, finding him inexorable, he applied to Mr. Marſhall's grandfather, who was the old gentleman Betty had ſeen in the chariot with the lady, and in order to gain his intereſt with his maſter, or perhaps to ſatiate his revenge, told him the reaſon of his being diſcharged, and related with ſome exaggerations, all that he knew or imagined he knew, concerning his maſter and Betty Barnes.

In conſequence of this intelligence, Mr. Marſhall received an order from his

grandfather to return to London; an order that he was obliged to obey on pain of forfeiting his favour; and as the old gentleman had not given his reaſons for this ſudden reſolution, he dreaded, if he made uſe of expoſtulations, his being himſelf the babbler of his own ſecret. Thus was he torn from her he loved, almoſt in the endearing moment of reconciliation, and had ſcarcely time to give a countryman a note for his miſtreſs, before his departure: this the honeſt man delivered, as he was ordered, and Betty had the conſolation of being aſſured that it was nothing but meer neceſſity that forced him from her.

THIS note found her weeping for her friend whom Joſeph had narrowly examined as to her paſt life, and who had, with lively expreſſions of the utmoſt penitence, confeſſed the truth of what her brother's ſervant had alledged againſt her; but had, at the ſame time, cleared Betty's reputation from all the odium his malice had thrown upon it. In the courſe of theſe explanations, both Betty and her friend received many mortifications from the ill-mannered licentiouſneſs of this coarſe-bred fellow's tongue.

THIS the unhappy woman, whoſe ſpirit was broke by a reflection on her paſt ill

ill conduct, bore in ſilence; but Betty, who felt no inward reproaches, reſented it with warmth, and inſiſted on going directly for London, if he ſtayed longer in the family. This accorded exactly with the wiſhes of the poor penitent, tho' ſhe durſt not make the motion. At length, Joſeph overcome by the tears of a ſiſter whom he had once loved with almoſt the affection of a father, as ſhe was many years younger than himſelf, granted all they wiſhed, and diſcharged his ſervant.

They now began to enjoy all the ſweets of a domeſtic life, and Betty was as happy as it was poſſible for one of her ſenſibility and tenderneſs to be, whilſt divided from what ſhe loved: not but ſhe had every alleviation that could make abſence ſupportable; ſhe frequently heard from Mr. Marſhall, who wrote to her under cover to her friend, and every letter as fully expreſſed the man of probity as the tender lover. He even intreated her to come to London; and informed her, that he had hopes of ſoon reconciling his mother to his happineſs. But alas! theſe inchanting proſpects were much farther diſtant than ſhe fondly imagined, and ſhe had difficulties and dangers to encounter, of which ſhe had not then the leaſt idea.

## CHAP. III.

In which Betty is carried away by violence, and ſaved by one villain from the brutality of another.

THE fellow who had been diſcharged from Joſeph's ſervice, had, on his departure from the village vowed revenge; but Betty had given very little heed to his menaces. Secure in her own innocence, ſhe dreaded no enemies, and remained ſecure till ſhe felt the effects of his malice.

ABOUT three weeks after Mr. Marſhall's departure, as ſhe and her companion were walking in the duſk of the evening in a field not far from home, they were ſtartled by a loud whiſtling, that ſeemed given for a ſignal. Inſtantly there ruſhed from behind a hedge three men in maſks, two of whom ſeized on Betty, and in ſpite of her cries, carried her off, while the third kept Joſeph's ſiſter in the field, and ſtayed to guard her, leſt ſhe ſhould raiſe the village, and engage the inhabitants to join in their purſuit. They carried the terrified girl in their arms acroſs two fields, till they came into a back lane, and then forced her into a coach which ſtood waiting

ing for them. They ſpoke not one word all this time, tho' the poor frighted creature begged them for God's ſake to let her know where they were carrying her.

As ſoon as they had placed her in the coach, one of the fellows returned back to give notice to his companion that he might ſet her friend at liberty, and they returned in a few minutes together, when he who had been left to guard the farmer's ſiſter mounted the coach-box, and drove at a furious rate the greateſt part of the night. At length fatigue obliged them to ſtop, which they did at a lone houſe, after one of the men, who, I ſhould have told you, rode on horſeback, had gone before to prevent Betty's complaint of ill uſage having any effect on the people of the houſe. Before they came to the place where they were to alight, he returned, and, in conjunction with his companion, rudely ſnatched off her handkerchief, and her cap, to give her as much as poſſible the appearance of madneſs, which was, they alledged, the cauſe of their travelling in the night. She heard one of the villains tell the landlord a plauſible ſtory of her being a rich farmer's daughter, whom the ſquire of the village had debauched, that ſhe was with child, and her father to hide her ſhame had left his

farm, and was going to ſettle in Nova Scotia, adding with a ſignificant look, that the poor man was ſo fond of his child, that he had ordered them to be ſparing of no expence on the road. The man of the houſe liſtened to the ſtory without ſeeming to mind what was ſaid to him, till the concluſion reminded him that he ought to make his own advantage of the girl's calamity, and he went briſkly to prepare them a refreſhment, that he might charge double the value in their bill, as he found it was not their own money they were ſpending. Tho' it was hardly poſſible for them to be worſe accommodated then they were at this inn, or rather alehouſe, yet fear, the villain's curſe, made them chuſe to put up with any inconveniencies, rather then run the hazard of a diſcovery.

AFTER they had reſted themſelves all day, they as ſoon as it was dark ſet out, and drove with the ſame rapidity as before: they had intruſted the landlord with the road they intended to take, but before they were many miles from his houſe, they found reaſon enough to repent their confidence. One of the men, to engage the landlord to give credit to what they ſaid, had ſhewed a handful of gold, which was a temptation too great for all his

his honeſty to withſtand. Perhaps he gueſſed that they impoſed on him by a ſham ſtory, and on that account imagined that he ſhould run no riſk of their appearing againſt him, and ſo reſolved for once to make bold with greater villains than himſelf.

The fellow in the coach had treated the girl with ſome indecencies, which ſhe loudly complained of; the man on horſeback, who ſeemed to be the civilleſt of the three, was blaming him, and the coachman, who had ſtopped his horſes that he might hear what they were talking of, had juſt ſaid, "Before God, if "you don't let the girl alone, you ſhall "drive the coach yourſelf for Robin; "for I know one who will give me as "much for diſcovering what I know, as "I ſhall get by this dirty job, when I have "damned my ſoul into the bargain." He had hardly finiſhed his threat, when they were alarmed with the trampling of horſes, and a cry of "Stop, you villains, or I'll "make you." The fellows thought of nothing but falling into the hands of juſtice, and influenced by their fears, made no reſiſtance, but ſuffered themſelves to be ſtripped of the caſh which had been given them to carry on their vile enterprize. Betty, leſs terrified at the robbers, than

ſhe had been at the impudence of the fellow in the coach, intreated the men, one of whom had juſt taken from her what money ſhe had in her pocket, not to leave her in the hands of that wicked wretch, meaning him in the coach; but rather to kill her.

THIS entreaty had but little effect on one of the rogues, and he was juſt going from them, but the other, a lively young fellow, was not proof againſt her tears; but after a little conſultation with the old man his companion, returned, and aſked her if ſhe would venture to go with him. Some menaces uttered by the fellow in the coach, threatening to revenge on her his diſappointment, made her not heſitate a moment: but accepting his offer, ſhe was ſeated behind the good-natured robber, who ſtripped off his upper coat to make her a pillion. The old man changed horſes with the fellow who had guarded the coach, which as his was better than his own, he inſtantly mounted, and returning with Betty and his companion, preſently loſt ſight of the firſt ſet of villains.

BETTY BARNES was ſurprized that after travelling ſeveral hours, ſhe ſhould come to no high road, for her own terror had made her forget that theſe men had as ſtrong reaſons to wiſh for concealment as

her

her raviſhers, ſince it was as much in her power to hurt them, as it could be to puniſh the others.

THE young man had aſked her many queſtions concerning the three men in whoſe company he found her; but ſhe knew nothing who they were: he then changed the ſubject to one that was ſtill more hateful; but what that was, will be ſeen in the next chapter.

## CHAP. IV.

The poor unhappy girl out of the reach of human help, finds a deliverer of the canine kind, who defends her from a two-legged brute.

THE old man, as he was by far the beſt mounted, was out of ſight, and they were on a wide common. It was now rather dawn than day-light, when by the boiſterouſneſs of a rude embrace, the young fellow ſeemed reſolved to take by force what he aſked for, as a reward for delivering her out of the hands of a wretch whom ſhe ſo much dreaded. She begged, ſhe expoſtulated; but her tears and entreaties ſerved only to add fuel to his lewd flame. Juſt as he was dragging her off the horſe, with an intent to ſatiate his wicked deſires, ſhe

heard a diſtant noiſe of dogs, which gave her a proſpect of relief. Theſe hopes inſpired her with new ſtrength; but the fellow ſhewed no manner of concern, tho' ſhe heard the noiſe come very near them. At length, all her proſpects of relief vaniſhed, by the appearance of a ſimple country boy driving ſome cattle to the next market town; for the fellow throwing him two-pence, eaſily perſuaded him to walk on, without heeding her cries.

HE had, while in ſight of the boy, as it was now near day-light, a little deſiſted from his attempt; but he ſtill held the poor girl in his arms, and was perſuading her to comply, and the boy was no ſooner at a conſiderable diſtance, than proceeding to extremities, ſhe gave a loud cry, which was rather produced by her deſpair, than any hopes of being heard, when a large dog which was at that inſtant running full ſpeed after the boy, ſtopped ſhort, and flew at the raviſher; he ſeized him by the calf of the leg, and the blood followed the gripe. The intolerable pain made him leave the terrified girl, and endeavour to diſengage himſelf from this new enemy, who ſtill kept faſt hold of him.

THE firſt uſe the poor creature made of the little breath ſhe had left, was to en-

courage her deliverer in the combat, which ſhe did with better ſucceſs than ſhe expected; the dog ſeemed a perfect tyger, and had got the fellow down, when ſhe left them to decide the victory, and ran as faſt as her feet would carry her along a beaten path, which ſhe now plainly diſcovered; this carried her to a ſmall village, where ſhe arrived in leſs than half an hour's running. Juſt as ſhe reached the houſes, the gallant dog which had been ſo ſtanchly her friend, came limping to her with one of his legs broke, and in ſpeechleſs eloquence told her his misfortune. She now diſcovered the natural cauſe of what had appeared to her very ſurprizing; for on her looking earneſtly at him, ſhe knew him to be a dog ſhe had brought up from a puppy, in the houſe of her good lady, and whom ſhe had often fed with her own hand.

## CHAP. V.

In which Betty finds relief, ſees again the villain mentioned in the preceding chapter, and ſhews a greater diſpoſition to mercy, than to the obſervance of the laws of rigorous juſtice.

THOUGH the incident we have juſt related had nothing in it ſupernatural, yet it was ſo uncommon, that it gave our diſtreſſed damſel the courage to combat the evils ſhe muſt neceſſarily ſuffer in a ſtrange place, without a farthing of money, or any thing of value. She told her tale to ſeveral poor cottagers: but as the ſtory appeared very romantick, ſhe met with little relief; for ſhe was too handſome to make the women her friend. Poor Tray, indeed, was a faithful witneſs that all ſhe ſaid was not falſe; for tho' he ſtill followed her, he howled with pain.

AT laſt ſhe came to a large farm-houſe, and ready to die with thirſt and fatigue, begged a draught of butter-milk, which ſhe eaſily obtained. Here her faithful deliverer left her, and ſtaggered into the houſe. As ſoon as the people beheld the dog's hurt, they ran out to ſee if they could diſcover who was the author, and

Betty

Betty acknowledged that ſhe was the cauſe. The honeſt farmer, who owned the dog, gave credit to the account; for ſhe had mentioned her living with the lady Benſon, and he had the dog from his wife's father, who lived in the ſame village with her ladyſhip, and was really the old man who had ſo well defended her honeſty, by laying open to her ladyſhip the villainy of her nephew.

Betty was now entertained with great kindneſs by the farmer, who had lately buried his wife, and was even offered the place of houſekeeper, which ſhe refuſed, reſolving, if poſſible, to get to the next poſt-town, in order to ſend an account to Joſeph's ſiſter, of her eſcape and preſent ſituation; and the farmer no ſooner knew her reſolution, than he ſent a man and horſe to carry her thither.

Her conductor had only heard of the intended rape; for the ſtory was too perplexed and long to be all repeated. The common on which the young robber had ſo terribly frighted her, lay in their way, and as he was perfectly acquainted with every part of it, he carefully enquired in what ſpot the villain had made his attempt; for as he imagined that he would hardly venture into any of the neighbouring villages till night, he reſolved to con-

conduct her thither, that he might have the ſatisfaction of ſeeing him. As ſoon as they had entered the common, her guide begged her with much earneſtneſs, to tell him how long ſhe had had the handkerchief ſhe had on her head; to which ſhe anſwered, that the fellow who had wounded the dog, gave it her to tie on her cap, when he took her on his horſe. The poor man then deſired to look at it, which he had no ſooner done, than he returned it, ſaying with a ſigh, "An ungracious "boy, what will become of him?" As they drew near, the noiſe of the horſes feet made the villain riſe as ſwiftly as his wounds would let him, but not time enough to prevent his being ſeen and known by the travellers, who both at once cried out, "It is the rogue!" "It "is my boy!" He was almoſt covered with blood; the dog had bit a large piece of fleſh out of the leg he had firſt faſtened on, had hurt one of his hands, and torn his cloaths almoſt to tatters; in this condition, aſhamed and afraid to appear in the town, he had lain ever ſince the dog left him, imagining that by continuing there all day, he ſhould eſcape being ſeen.

The terror Betty Barnes was in, prevented her taking notice of the old man's exclа-

exclamation; for ſhe feared her infirm guard would be inſufficient to protect her from the deſigns of ſo determined a wretch; but loſs of blood and excruciating pain, had cooled his vile deſires, and the voice of the old man, abandoned as he was, had awaked his ſenſe of ſhame. He told the trembling girl, that he had ſuffered too much already, to give her any farther cauſe for fear, and then turning to her conductor, who was bedewing his griſley beard with a ſhower of tears, and who had a mixture of terror, anger and pity, at once viſible in his aged face, he begged him to interceed with the young woman in his favour, and to prevail on her not to be the cauſe of his death; for he ſuppoſed the whole village was apprized of his crime, and in the condition he was in, it was impoſſible he ſhould make his eſcape.

The poor old man, whoſe terror was increaſed by every word he ſpoke, intreated her to be merciful to the lad, for the ſake of his aged mother, whoſe life was wrapped up in his, and who, he was ſure, would ſoon follow her beloved ſon to the grave. The young fellow himſelf promiſed amendment, and proteſted that this was the firſt robbery he had ever committed. The tender-hearted girl was ſoon brought to promiſe not to hurt him, and

and really ſympathized in the grief of the father, who wore all the marks of honeſt ſorrow.

THIS point being gained, they begged her to ſuffer them to carry her to their own village, which was not above three miles further than the town they deſigned to go to, tho' it lay another way. This, ſhe with ſome unwillingneſs complied with, for as ſhe knew not a ſtep of the way, ſhe conſidered that it was in their power to leave her where they pleaſed. The laſt requeſt, which ſhe alſo granted was, that the poor tattered fellow might take his father's place on the horſe, as his own had ſtrayed out of ſight, and that the old man ſhould walk, not only to favour his ſon's ſore leg, but as much as poſſible to hide his condition from the villagers, who, from ſome unlucky pranks, had already but an ill opinion of him. In this manner they completed their ſhort journey, and arrived at the old man's cottage; but what paſſed there, we ſhall reſerve for the ſubject of the enſuing chapter.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VI.

The manner in which the robber was received by his fond mother, and ſome events which paſſed during the time Betty ſtaid in the family.

THE old man had no ſooner opened his door, than his wife ſet up a cry of aſtoniſhment and joy at the ſight of her ſon, whom ſhe had not ſeen for ſome months; but when ſhe beheld his condition, ſhe behaved like one frantic; ſhe was for calling a perſon who had the reputation of ſome ſkill to dreſs his wound. The old gaffer was forced to put on an appearance of authority, to put a ſtop to the aſſiduity and tenderneſs ſhe expreſſed for her ſon: to make her quiet, he told her, it was well it was no worſe: for if he had his deſerts, and the young woman had not as much mercy as the boy had wickedneſs, he would not come off ſo cheap; for that if ſo be that every one had their right, he richly deſerved the gallows. "So, prythee, woman," added he, "don't make ſuch a bawling; but make "haſte and get him to bed out of ſight; "for if he ſhould come to any harm, all "our neighbours will blame you: you

"know

" know they will; for I always told you,
" what your cockering him up, and hu-
" mouring him in all his tricks, would
" come to."

THIS ſpeech frighted the good woman into obedience, and ſhe haſtily conveyed her ſon to bed, while the father went to provide a plaiſter for his wounds. The mother, when ſhe came from her ſon, was almoſt as earneſt in her expreſſions of gratitude to Betty Barnes, as ſhe had been loud in thoſe of her fondneſs to her child; ſhe called her the preſerver of her boy's life, and begged heaven to reward her pity to a family which had known nothing but misfortunes; and her huſband leaving her free from reſtraint, by going to ſome of his neighbours to get ſomething for ſupper, ſhe gave her gueſt a long account of the hardſhips ſhe had ſtruggled with; told her ſhe had been ſervant to the parſon of the pariſh, and married to a man who ſhe thought was worth money, but proved to be in debt, and not only left her without ſupport, but ruined her brother, who was bound for him, and forced him to leave his habitation, and that ſhe had not ſeen this brother for almoſt twenty years, till ſome months before, when coming home, he gave them a great many good things, and among the reſt,

the

the very handkerchief Betty had on when ſhe came in, which ſhe knew as ſoon as ſhe ſaw it; for having burnt a hole in it, ſhe had derned it herſelf, and afterwards had given it to her ſon, and charged the untoward youth to keep it.

Betty was too much fatigued to give any great attention to this tattle, but found herſelf ſtrangely influenced in the poor woman's favour, without being able to account for the cauſe. The next day ſhe found that the old man was not the woman's firſt huſband, tho' he was the youth's father, and had been married to her many years, her firſt huſband dying ſoon after he left her. The old couple perſuaded her to ſtay and reſt herſelf the next day, which ſhe did, and was prevailed upon to ſend her letter to her friend by the old man the day following, and to wait there for an anſwer.

While Betty continued here, ſhe had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing that her good nature was not thrown away. We have already mentioned, that the young fellow had been away from home for ſeveral months: his abſence had been occaſioned by a neighbour's daughter being with child by him, which had cauſed him to abſcond for fear of puniſhment. This girl had been lately brought to bed. The

old

old woman, who was too apt to talk of all ſhe knew, had made Betty acquainted with the affair, and had brought the child to her, which was followed by a viſit from the mother, a pretty girl under twenty. The confuſion of the young creature on the ſight of a ſtranger, who ſhe was ſure was acquainted with her folly, covered her with bluſhes that greatly took off the prejudice Betty had conceived againſt her, and dictated to her mind a project which ſhe inſtantly put in execution. The old woman had always ſeemed uneaſy if ſhe but ſpoke to any one who came into the houſe, and had often with an air of dread, put her in mind of her promiſe, which ſhe had not the leaſt intention to revoke; ſhe therefore reſolved to make uſe of this fear, to make the young fellow do an act of juſtice. She aſked him the reaſon of his not marrying the girl he had debauched, and found it proceeded more from levity than any diſlike. She then talk'd of it at a diſtance to the mother, who anſwered, "An we could but bring him to that, "I ſhould have hopes of him, for ſhe "is an honeſt induſtrious creature, and "I am ſure loves the knave, tho' he has "ruined her. An he wou'd but ſettle "once, I ſhould think he had ſowed all "his wild oats, and that would rejoice my

" my old heart; but it is ſuch a hilding,
" that I fear he wean't mind any thing I
" can ſay. An he wou'd, my brother
" wou'd make a man of en; for he has
" it in his power." Betty now laid open her deſign to the good woman, without the leaſt reſerve, and having fixed upon the method they thought moſt likely to be attended with ſucceſs, reſolved to put it in execution. The fellow ſtill kept his bed, tho' he was very like to do well; but he dreaded being ſeen by any one, eſpecially by his miſtreſs or her father. Betty therefore entered the houſe ſeemingly in a great heat, and told the mother in a key loud enough to be heard, that ſhe thought if ſhe concealed the villainy of her ſon, ſhe ſhould be acceſſary to his future crimes; for ſhe had heard ſo bad a character of him, that ſhe deſpaired of his ever being better. " There's a pretty
" girl whom he has debauched," added ſhe, " I'll talk to her, and if ſhe will
" forgive him, I think I may." This ſeemed like a dead warrant to the poor fellow, who had no notion of the artifice. The mother begged her not to tell her, for to be ſure ſhe would take pleaſure in being revenged on him. " I hope not," Betty replied, " for I have talked to her
" already, and I really believe ſhe loves
" him,

" him, but if he is afraid of her he muſt " marry her, and then ſhe can't hurt " him." Here the mother went out, and in her abſence, the poor young creature entered with her child, who was entirely ignorant of the deſign; but ſhe no ſooner appeared, than Betty told her very abruptly, that ſhe wondered her parents did not force the father of her child to make her his wife. The girl anſwered, ſhe believed her father would, if he knew where to find him; but ſhe was ſure, that would be the way to make her miſerable, and ſhe would rather for ever bear the reproach of her folly, than be made more wretched by his being an ill huſband. " So then," Betty returned, " you hate " the fellow. I think he deſerves it." " Hate him," the girl replied with a ſigh, " No, if I had hated him, it would " not have been in his power to have " ruined me; but I dread nothing ſo " much as his hating me. I had rather " ſee him married to another woman and " happy, than have him forced to be my " huſband: for then we ſhould be both " miſerable."

THO' Betty Barnes was perfectly pleaſed with the young woman's way of thinking, ſhe ſtill kept up an appearance of wonder. " What," ſays ſhe, " would you chuſe to go " under

" under the ſcandal of having a child with-
" out a huſband, before you would conſent
" to force the father to do you juſtice?"
" Ah, if you knew what it was to love
" as I do," replied the girl, " you would
" not wonder that I ſhould chuſe any
" hardſhip, before being deſpiſed by him
" I love; or any ſcandal, rather than the
" daily upbraidings of having made him
" wretched, for whom I would ſacrifice my
" life to make happy." Here a flood of tears prevented her proceeding.

THE young fellow had heard her voice, and partly from a dread of Betty's telling all ſhe knew, and partly from ſome remains of tenderneſs, got out of his bed to liſten. His affright had made him dreſs himſelf, reſolving to ſlip out of the houſe the firſt opportunity, if his miſtreſs ſhould be made acquainted either with the intended rape or robbery, chuſing rather to truſt to his heels for ſafety, than the mercy of an injured woman; but when the girl had ſhewn no ſigns of reſentment, but had vented the warmeſt wiſhes for his happineſs, it rouſed all the remains of his humanity: he could not ſee her, but he could hear by the ſound of her voice, while ſhe endeavoured to huſh her infant, that the tears choaked her words. Unable longer to bear the ſtrong ſenſation of tenderneſs

derneſs with which he was now affected, he burſt from his confinement, and taking her and his child in his arms, mixed his tears with hers, and as ſoon as he could ſpeak, told her, he was reſolved to try if he could not make her as happy as ſhe wiſhed him.

THE young creature was ſo ſurprized at his unexpected appearance, that ſhe was very near fainting; however, as joy is a diſtemper that cures itſelf, ſhe ſoon recovered, and Betty Barnes had the pleaſure of ſeeing all about her bleſſed, before ſhe had time to put half her ſcheme in practice. She had deſigned to have left the young fellow under the influence of his fears for ſome days, and then to have made the young woman his advocate; but the unaffected tenderneſs of this artleſs creature foreſtalled her deſign, and produced this additional advantage, that it left her wholly unacquainted with the heinouſneſs of her huſband's guilt, which would undoubtedly have ſhocked the peace of a perſon whoſe mind was of ſo ſoft a diſpoſition.

CHAP.

## CHAP. VII.

Betty, on her coming to the village from whence ſhe had been carried away, finds her friend Joſeph dead, and returns to London with his unhappy ſiſter.

THOUGH Betty Barnes ſincerely ſympathized in the bliſs ſhe had ſo happily produced, ſhe began to feel ſome pain at the delay of an anſwer to her letter. She ſent another, but ſtill received no anſwer. Amazed at the ſilence of her friend, ſhe reſolved, after a ſuſpence of five weeks, to undertake a journey to the honeſt farmer's, tho' it was near ſeventy miles, and tho' ſhe had no money, except the trifle of which ſhe had been robbed, and which the new married man had returned. He offered her, indeed, his ſhare of the money which had been taken from the villains who firſt carried her off; but ſhe abſolutely refuſed it, and adviſed the young man to keep it, till he found out the owner, ſaying, What or whoever they were, he had no right to the money. In this diſtreſs ſhe ſet out for the town from which her letters were ſent, and from thence to the village in which Joſeph had lived; but inſtead of meeting with the

welcome and countenance of her friend, ſhe found that the good man had breathed his laſt, and that dying ſuddenly, he had not time to make a will, tho' the neighbours told her he had attempted it. After his deceaſe there was found one of an old date, which entitled his ſervant to the remains of his leaſe, and appointed him his ſole executor. In this will he had left Betty Barnes two hundred pounds, tho', by the date, it appeared to have been made not long after ſhe left the lady Benſon's. At the time of his death, his executor was not to be found, but he ſoon put in his claim, and was actually in poſſeſſion of the farm, from which he had drove the ſiſter of his late maſter, to whom, as well as to Betty, he had now the moſt inveterate ſpite. Here he had received Betty's letters; but in order to torment her, had concealed them from her friend to whom they were directed, and who was ſtill in the village, where ſhe had behaved well enough to find many who heartily pitied her, tho' they could do but little to relieve her wants. She had indeed the diſtant hope of being able to make the wretch relinquiſh his claim, as ſhe had an undoubted right to the poſſeſſions of her brother; for he had not excluded her according to law; and it

was

was evident, that at the time of his making his will, he did not believe ſhe was alive: but right alone is a weak pretence on which to commence a law-ſuit, except the claimants have gold enough to unhoodwink the eyes of juſtice, or what is to be contended for is ſo conſiderable, as to tempt the avarice of the rich to help them; but neither was the caſe here: Betty Barnes indeed offered to divide her legacy with her, when it ſhould come to her poſſeſſion; but this was no preſent relief, for the man who enjoyed what ſhe thought her right, would by no means be brought to pay the money till he ſhould be legally forced to it, which could not be done for ſome months: however, their good-natured neighbours, who loved them both, did what they could to aſſiſt them, and they ſat out once more for London, and arrived there, without meeting on the road with any event worth recording.

## CHAP. VIII.

The ſituation in which Betty finds her affairs in London; ſhe borrows money on her legacy, and reſolves to go no more to ſervice.

BETTY, on her arrival in town, went to ſee her friend Mrs. Robinſon, who told her that Mr. Marſhall had been with her, and in the utmoſt conſternation and grief, gave her almoſt the ſame account that ſhe herſelf did, of being carried away, as far as her meeting with the highwaymen, only adding, that the blow came from a hand which he durſt not call to an account, tho' if ever he was ſo happy as to ſee his dear girl again, he would be himſelf her protector, in ſpite of all the hazard he might run, with reſpect to his future fortune, and that he was reſolved to own his love, and vindicate her innocence from all the calumny that malice or avarice had thrown on it. This declaration, like a reviving cordial, cheered her dropping ſpirits, which had almoſt ſunk under her fatigue and embarraſſments. When ſhe had eaſed her heart, by an enquiry into its deareſt intereſts, ſhe was at leiſure to think of her friend,

friend, and begged Mrs. Robinſon to put her in a way of getting her money, that ſhe might have it in her power to aſſiſt her. On this the good lady told her with a ſmile, that ſhe ſuppoſed, as ſoon as her lover knew ſhe was in town, ſhe would find a much more powerful aſſiſtant in him; but that ſhe would do her all the ſervice in her power, and actually lent her caſh to ſupply their preſent wants.

When ſhe had been ſome days in London, ſhe went to ſee Miſs Stevens, now Mrs. Glanville, who informed her that her huſband had found out who was her lover ſoon after ſhe went away, and had aſked her about it in ſo preſſing a manner, that ſhe was obliged, as her endeavours to conceal the affair had ſeemed to give him pain, to own that he was right in his conjecture, and that ſince their marriage he had confeſſed, he was a little jealous. She informed her alſo, that the two gentlemen were now great friends; but that an unaccountable melancholy had ſeized Mr. Marſhall, who had left London without acquainting any one where he was going.

This news, tho' it was a ſtrong teſtimony of his love, gave his miſtreſs, who was not behind hand with him in tender-

neſs, much uneaſineſs; for as ſhe thought it almoſt impoſſible for him to procure any account of her ſafety, ſhe did not know how long he might continue his fruitleſs ſearch. Beſides, the dread ſhe was under leſt his precipitate flight ſhould take from him the affection of his mother, who, ſhe knew was infinitely dear to him, encreaſed her uneaſineſs; for tho' ſhe would have been well contented to have ſpent her life with him in any circumſtances, ſhe could not bear the thought of depriving him of the bleſſing, and love of his friends.

WHILE her mind was in this uncertainty, ſhe went to the houſe of the friendly grocer, who told her in a laughing way, that ſhe had loſt a good fortune ſince he had ſeen her; for that Mr. Hammond, the perſon who had ſo charitably paid part of the money to get her into the hoſpital, had always talked of leaving her what he had, as he did not believe there was ſuch another honeſt girl in the world; but that he had ſince been in the country, and had been reconciled to his relations, whom he had not ſeen ſince he was a young man.

THIS made very little impreſſion on Betty Barnes, and it paſſed without notice as common chat; for ſhe had no thought

thought that he meant more than a jeſt; ſhe was already under great obligations to the honeſt ſailor, who had relieved her in her greateſt extremity; he had refuſed to take again the two guineas he had lent her to furniſh her in a manner fit for ſervice, always deferring the payment till ſhe ſhould be married to her gentleman; at the ſame time intimating with an honeſt ſincerity, that if he ſtaid till then, he ſhould never be repaid. This ſort of anſwer made Betty Barnes deſiſt from offering it him, as it gave her pain, that any one ſhould ſo much as ſuſpect Mr. Marſhall's ſincerity, this had alſo made her remiſs in going to ſee her benefactors, tho' ſhe ſtill retained a grateful ſenſe of her obligations to them.

The delightful news ſhe had received from her friend Mrs. Robinſon, that her lover had reſolved when they ſhould meet, to make her his, kept up her ſpirits during this cruel ſuſpence, which laſted ſix weeks. Confident of his performing his promiſe, ſhe reſolved to go no more to ſervice, and expended part of the money Mrs. Robinſon had advanced on her legacy, in order to make an appearance more ſuitable to the ſituation of one who was ſoon to be united to Mr. Marſhall. Mrs. Robinſon really loved her, ſhe now

made her her companion, treated her as her friend, and introduced her into company, and with an eaſy familiarity, gave her ſuch leſſons, as, ſhe thought, might be of uſe to her in her future life. Thus encouraged, ſhe began to loſe her natural timidity, and an aukward baſhfulneſs which had in ſome meaſure eclipſed her merit, or at leaſt made it leſs conſpicuous amongſt the generality of thoſe with whom ſhe converſed; but to procure this trivial advantage, ſhe did not forget the higher delights that ariſe from doing good; the unhappy ſiſter of her late friend ſhared her purſe, ſhe gave her all the conſolation in her power, and promiſed, if heaven was propitious to her wiſhes, in reſtoring to her her much valued lover, to make her intereſt her peculiar care.

## CHAP. IX.

### Contains an important diſcovery.

BETTY, ſoon after the receipt of the caſh, which, when ſhe had paid Mrs. Robinſon, amounted to near a hundred and fifty pounds, went, perhaps with ſome of the vanity of a young heart, at her making a genteel appearance, to ſee her benefactors, the grocer and his friend; but

but as her dreſs, tho' not rich, was a good deal different from what they thought could ſuit the circumſtances of ſo young a ſervant, they received her very coldly: the man who had been ſo much her friend, had a mixture of uneaſineſs with his reſerve that kept him ſilent; but the ſhopkeeper, who felt no more concern for her than he would for any other whom he imagined had ſacrificed her virtue to her vanity, told her with a harſh incivility, that he was always glad to ſee her till now; but ſhe was ſo dreſſed, that if any one that ſaw her, ſhould aſk him what lady he had got with him, he ſhould be quite at a loſs what to anſwer. "Why," replied Betty, a little confounded, tho' ſhe hardly knew the drift of this odd ſpeech, "I ſhall never be aſhamed of your ſay-
"ing, that I am an unhappy girl,
"whom your generoſity has relieved."
"But," returned he, "I ſhould be a-
"ſhamed, I aſſure you, for no body can
"think that ſwinging hoop and fly-flap
"cap can be fit for a ſervant. In my
"mind, you was much handſomer in the
"plain coif and ſtuff gown you came firſt to
"London in, tho' you were neither ruffed
"nor ruffled."

Betty, who now gueſſed at what he aimed, had her face and neck covered

with a deep bluſh, and was going to reply with ſome heat; but a recollection of her obligations ſtopt her tongue, and ſhe only ſaid, "Indeed, Sir, your ſuſpicions "wrong me; for tho' I am not now a "ſervant, what you call my finery is no "proof of my ſhame, ſince I owe it to "the kindneſs of a deceaſed friend." "Ah, Betty, Betty," anſwered the grocer, "I rather think it is to the unkindneſs "of a living enemy, and I am afraid, you "will one time or other be of my "mind."

BETTY, extremely nettled that ſhe had ſo little credit with her old friend, burſt out a crying, and in the flutter of reſentment, hurried out her purſe, reſolving to repay the money ſhe had borrowed, that ſhe might have no future occaſion to return to a place, where ſhe was ſo ill thought of. This ſhe did while ſhe was drying her eyes with her handkerchief, and at the ſame time unknown to herſelf, dropt a parcel which ſhe had worn ſome years in the boſom of her ſtays, and had pulled out that day, in order to put it in the new ones ſhe had on. In its fall the upper paper came unpined, and diſcovered to the perſon who picked it up, which happened to be the grocer's friend, part of a letter which was well known to him.

Betty,

Betty, on her turning to give him the caſh, ſaw her important pacquet in his trembling hand, and twitched it from him with ſuch eagerneſs, that part of the letter remained behind. On his fixing his eyes on the piece, which ſtill remained in his hand, without minding Betty Barnes, who entreated him to give it her, he ſighed out, "My dear Betty, how unaccounta-"bly am I put in mind of thee!" then caſting his eyes on Betty Barnes, he aſked, where ſhe had that paper. The hurry and confuſion with which he ſpoke, gave her much emotion; however, ſhe told him, that ſhe had had it ſome years, and again begged him to give it her, while he, on his ſide, entreated her to ſhew him the remainder, which ſhe held in her hand. In this ſhe gratified him; but his tremor and aſtoniſhment ſeemed greatly to encreaſe, on her unwrapping the other teſtimonies of her birth, the lock of hair, and bit of ſilver which were contained in another part of the letter; for it had been much torn by the rough captain in the orchard. The honeſt man, now in a perfect tranſport, begged her to tell how ſhe came by theſe things, and for what reaſon ſhe kept them with ſo much ſeeming care. Betty, not far behind him in wonder and emotion, replied,

becauſe ſhe had ſome diſtant hope that ſhe might one time or other find out her father, and that ſhe had no better way to make herſelf known to him. "Your "father!" he anſwered, "what can this "do to diſcover your father? or how can "it concern him? I entreat you, my dear "girl, to eaſe my ſuſpence, and tell me, "what is your father's name." "In-"deed, Sir, I don't know," returned ſhe, burſting again into tears, "I only know "that I am very unhappy in his loſs; for "if I was bleſſed with his care, I ſhould "not be ſo much expoſed to cruel cen-"ſure and ſuſpicion; which I am ſure, "I don't deſerve." A ſob prevented her proceeding, while the compaſſionate ſailor had his rough and weather-beaten coun-tenance ſoftened by the tears of pity. She again recovered herſelf, and on his enquiring, if ſhe knew any thing of her mother, confeſſed her ignorance: "I was," ſays ſhe, "looked upon, and thought "myſelf a baſtard, till I was almoſt thir-"teen years old, when the worthy man "who has left me the money which has "brought on me your ill opinion, gave "me theſe things, and informed me, that "my mother was a poor woman, who "had been forced from the place where "ſhe lived, when big with child, and

"that

" that I was born in an out-houſe belong-
" ing to his maſter; that his cruel miſtreſs
" put an end to her life, by ordering her
" to be removed, and that before ſhe
" died, ſhe told this man's wife that her
" huſband was at ſea, being forced to
" leave her, becauſe he was bound for
" another's debt."

BETTY had ſcarce time to finiſh this relation, before the eager arms of a fond father graſped her neck, crying in a tone of the utmoſt tenderneſs, " You are, you
" are my child! My long loſt child! Oh,
" if you are really honeſt, I ſhall be too
" too happy!"

THE extatic delight of being incircled in a father's embraces, rendered her unable for ſome time to return an anſwer to this tenderneſs, and they both enjoyed a ſpeechleſs rapture too great for words: when the ſwell of joy, which at this inſtant might be called the pang of bliſs, would give her leave, ſhe anſwered his tenderneſs with the ſtrongeſt expreſſions of filial duty, and affectionate reverence. She intreated him to have a better opinion both of her and her lover, than to let any doubts cloud their preſent joy, and, in ſhort, gave ſo ſtrong a deſcription of her abhorrence of vice, that the grocer himſelf, who had been preſent at this affecting

ſcene, beginning to think he had been too raſh, ſincerely aſked her pardon, and heartily wiſhed her joy of her preſent happineſs. The exultation of her heart was now too great for her to retain the uneaſy ſenſations of anger, ſhe forgave his ſuſpicion, thanked him for his expreſſions of friendſhip, and told him, that ſhe had double obligations to him, as the friend of her father, as well as her own.

As ſoon as they were calm enough to talk of the little affairs of life, her father told her, that his circumſtances would afford her all decent neceſſaries, but no ſuperfluity; for he lived on the intereſt of his money, which was rather under two thouſand pounds, and out of that he allowed ſome help to a ſiſter that had an infirm huſband, who was unable to keep her. On her aſking him where her aunt lived, that ſhe might go and ſee her, he gave her new cauſe for wonder, by naming the very village where ſhe had waited for a letter from her friend, and calling the woman who had ſo kindly entertained her his ſiſter. He then told her, that he had that week ſent 50 l. to his nephew, their ſon, who was juſt married to a girl whoſe father had ſcraped together about the ſame ſum. The preſence of the grocer prevented her mentioning

tioning to her father the villanies of which this young fellow had been guilty, and generoſity afterwards when ſhe had time for conſideration, made her reſolve never to do it, leſt it ſhould take from him the favour of his uncle.

I HAVE mentioned before, that this honeſt ſailor boarded with his friend the grocer; but as he had now occaſion for more room than his preſent landlord could well ſpare, it was determined, that Mr. Hammond ſhould look out for more commodious lodgings; but as this required time, his daughter was permitted to return to her friend.

## CHAP. X.

Betty meets with new ſubjects of diſcontent from her father, her friends, and her enemies.

THIS change in her circumſtances, was far from making any in her heart towards her old friends; Joſeph's ſiſter ſtill ſhared her confidence and her caſh, and ſhe gave her thirty pounds, leſt the authority and care of her father, ſhould take it out of her hands: but on her telling this worthy man in what relation this woman ſtood to her benefactor,

ſhe found that ſhe had no occaſion for this precaution; for he was full as ready to aſſiſt her as ſhe was to aſk it, and actually ſerved her with ſo much induſtry, that her affairs were ſoon in a good ſituation.

IN the mean time our fair one, who we ſhall no longer call Betty Barnes, as ſhe had an undoubted right to the name of her father, was in a condition to be pitied, her careful parent, who, perhaps, had not quite loſt his ſuſpicion of her having had an unwarrantable engagement with the fine gentleman whom his landlord had deſcribed to him, was continually teizing her to accept of the addreſſes of a perſon who had been his ſhip-mate, and had, tho' but a middle aged man, made the ſame advantages as he had done; but this was not all, he inveighed ſo bitterly againſt private intrigues, that ſhe feared ſhe ſhould have no great reaſon to congratulate herſelf on her having found a father, who, notwithſtanding ſhe had a warm ſenſe of filial affection, was leſs dear to her than her engaging lover. On her urging to her father her long engagement to Mr. Marſhall; for he had inſiſted on knowing who he was, ſhe had the pain of hearing him ſay, that he ſhould never conſent to her keeping him company againſt the

the conſent of his friends; and that he had much rather ſee her married to her equal, than have her looked on as a diſgrace to the family of her huſband: and that for his part, he ſhould think it no honour to have a ſon-in-law that would be aſhamed of his alliance. It was to no purpoſe for her to plead the known tenderneſs of her lover, the good man had propoſed to himſelf in his declining years much happineſs, in the calm enjoyments of domeſtic life, and this union, he thought, would deſtroy all his ſchemes; he knew nothing of the great world, and by being always kept at a diſtance from genteel life, he had conceived I know not what of awe, that rendered the company of the gay and grand diſagreeable to him. On the contrary, his daughter, by the freedom and eaſe with which ſhe had been uſed in her infancy and childhood, by her dear inſtructor, Mr. Evans, had imbibed a way of thinking, that made the leaſt ruſticity painful: ſhe, indeed, now made a ſacrifice of her inclination to her duty, and kept no company but ſuch as her father approved; but in the momentous affair of love, ſhe thought the happineſs of her whole life at ſtake, and ſhe both wiſhed and dreaded the return of her lover.

WHILE her mind was in this ſtate of embarraſſment, ſhe received a letter from Mrs. Granville, which informed her of Mr. Marſhall's being at his grand-father's country houſe, almoſt dead with fatigue and perplexity, and that he had had a ſevere quarrel with the old gentleman, the occaſion of which was kept a ſecret: that Mrs. Marſhall, his mother, detained him by a violent fit of illneſs, which had been occaſioned by her vexation at his abſence, and his diſagreement with her father. In ſhort, that the whole family was in confuſion, and all ſeemed abſolutely bent to break off the engagements which they fancied he was under. She likewiſe informed her, that ſhe intended, if ſhe approved of it, to ſend Mr. Glanville, who was in the country with his couſin, an account of her having found her father, which might, in ſome meaſure, take off the prodigious diſlike which both the old gentleman and his daughter ſhewed to the match; for the lover had been too much enraged to conceal his deſigns, he openly avowed his paſſion, and all that their united efforts could bring him to, was to promiſe that he would ſtay in the country till his mother was able to return to town.

BETTY

BETTY did not fail to ſend an immediate anſwer to this piece of intelligence, in which ſhe deſired the lady not to take any notice of her change of circumſtances; for that ſhe was much afraid, that heaven did not approve their union, ſince her father ſeemed as much inclined to reject the generous offers of Mr. Marſhall, on account of his ſuperiority, as the relations of her lover were to deſpiſe her for her poverty; and let her ſuffer what ſhe would, ſhe was reſolved not to be outdone in filial reſpect and duty; her father ſhe ſaid, tho' far inferior in circumſtances to the relations of Mr. Marſhall, had certainly as good a right to her obedience, as his mother, and he was himſelf too ſenſible of what he owed to the content of a parent, to blame her refuſing her hand, till ſhe was authorized to give it, by him who had a right to command it.

THESE ſentiments, which were really rather the dictates of her head than her heart, made Mrs. Glanville, who was of a warm and impetuous diſpoſition, conclude, that ſhe was very little influenced by a paſſion which had made ſuch wild inroads into her peace, and that it could be no unuſeful office, to endeavour to break off an attachment which filled a family

family related to her huſband, with confuſion and uneaſineſs, and which ſeemed to promiſe nothing but perplexity and vexation. To forward this deſign, ſhe ſent Betty's letter encloſed in her own to her huſband, adviſing him to ſhew it to his friend, and to perſuade him to forget a girl who was too luke-warm to deſerve his tenderneſs. Mr. Glanville complied with this requeſt; but his couſin, grown peeviſh by the frequent oppoſitions he had met with, was far from giving him a patient hearing, and, in the violence of his temper, was imprudent enough to glance at the propoſal Mr. Glanville had formerly made her, and inſinuated, that poſſibly the embers of his own love were reviving.

THIS unjuſt ſuſpicion greatly exaſperated Mr. Glanville, who in the heat of reſentment, let fall expreſſions, which betrayed to ſome of the family, whom the high words which had paſſed had induced to liſten, that the miſtreſs Mr. Marſhall was ſo fond of, as for her ſake to contradict the will of his friends, had formerly been Mr. Glanville's ſervant.

THIS piece of information was too important to be long concealed, eſpecially as there was in the family a lady who would probably be a conſiderable gainer by

by the young gentleman's being diſinherited, and who had this farther reaſon to ſtimulate her revenge, that he had overlooked her charms, of which ſhe herſelf had no mean opinion.

Mrs. Marſhall ſeemed now more than ever alarmed at her ſon's infatuation, as ſhe called it; for tho' ſhe was in the country with a friend whilſt Betty lived with her couſin, Mr. Glanville's firſt wife, yet that lady had on her return to town, acquainted her with a circumſtance which ſhe thought would entitle her to the ſoft relief of pity, from a heart ſo compaſſionate as Mrs. Marſhall's: ſhe exaggerated the ſmalleſt appearances, and poſitively pronounced her huſband guilty of infidelity to her bed; but this prudent lady, whatever were her private thoughts, endeavoured to perſuade the jealous wife to have a better opinion of a man with whom ſhe was deſtined to paſs her life, and adviſed her to conceal her ſuſpicions from the world, ſince all ſhe could hope for, would be a uſeleſs compaſſion from the few, while the many would probably make her misfortune a ſubject on which to diſplay their fancied wit and raillery.

But the caſe of her ſon was widely different, the fatal knot might yet be prevented, and a number of concurring circumſtances

cumſtances had united to perſuade this fond mother, that in following the bent of his own will, he would entail on himſelf laſting diſhonour. Nay, ſo ſtrongly was ſhe prepoſſeſſed againſt the match, that ſhe accuſed her ſon with having willfully deceived her, and of being mean enough to wed a woman, who to his knowledge, had forfeited her honour. This reproach was almoſt too much for his tenderneſs, and reſpectful affection; he for a few moments forgot that he was a ſon, and anſwered with a bitterneſs, which a minute's reflexion made him repent: and tho' ſtung to the uttermoſt, the tears of this beloved parent checked the rapidity of his reſentment; he promiſed never to do any thing that could juſtly be ſaid to diſhonour her or himſelf; but at the ſame time inſiſted, that his marrying a woman who had every qualification that could render the female ſex amiable, except a large fortune, was no real diſgrace. "Ah! "my ſon," replied the lady, "young "men are too often led by their paſſions "into great miſtakes, in regard to thoſe "they love. A partial affection hides "faults, and creates beauties; you will "ſee with other eyes, when marriage "makes the graces of the perſon you "now ſo much admire, loſe their ſtrik-

"ing

" ing glare, by becoming more familiar
" to your ſight. Believe me, the high
" wrought extaſies which you may now
" fancy, would attend the poſſeſſion of
" her you love, will be but a poor
" amends for the loſs of wealth and ho-
" nour. With great difficulty I have
" kept my father from altering his will,
" and I fear this diſcovery will make
" him more outrageous. You know he
" has more then common reaſon to be
" afraid of an ill concerted union, and
" has himſelf felt the miſery of being ill
" matched. If I can gain no more, let
" me at leaſt, prevail on you to be-calm,
" and give way to the peeviſhneſs and in-
" firmities of age; and I here give you
" my word, if you can convince my rea-
" ſon that this girl is virtuous, her want
" of fortune ſhall be no obſtacle to my
" conſent: but I deſpair of bringing my
" father to this way of thinking. He
" had deſigned you for your couſin, and,
" I am ſure, is much mortified at the diſ-
" appointment: it ought, therefore, to
" be your care, to ſoften his temper as
" much as poſſible, and not, by an ill-
" timed oppoſition, rouſe his fury. Ac-
" cording to the courſe of nature, he will
" not be much longer in the world. If
" your miſtreſs deſerves you, you can

" have

" have no fear of her conſtancy, and tho' " wealth is by no means the whole that " conſtitutes happineſs, yet it is certain- " ly a very good ingredient." As this diſcourſe was calculated both to convince his judgment, and flatter his paſſion with hopes, its effect was not loſt, and as he himſelf believed, that the affection of his lovely girl was too deeply rooted to be eraſed by the caprice of her father, he was more at eaſe.

IN this laſt belief he was perfectly right; for ſhe had only aſſumed an appearance of reſignation and obedience, which all her efforts could not make her come up to. On her returning to reſt, after ſhe had ſent to Mrs. Glanville the letter which had been the cauſe of this new diſturbance, her tortured imagination repreſented her conduct as ungrateful and cruel: every tender accent, every generous offer of her lover, when ſhe was in indigent circumſtances, aroſe in her mind to reproach her, and ſhe determined to pay a viſit to Mrs. Glanville, to eraſe, if poſſible, any ill impreſſion ſhe might have conceived againſt her: but what was her diſappointment, when that lady told her, in a cold ſhy way, that ſhe had ſent her letter to her huſband, in order to let Mr. Marſhall ſee the great regard ſhe had for

him?

him. Betty was ſtunned and confounded, and by her dejection and tears, convinced Mrs. Glanville, that if her deſign took effect, it muſt inevitably make her miſerable: this thought rouſed all her compaſſion, and ſoon changed the coolneſs of her behaviour to one more friendly. She even promiſed her, that if her own precipitate conduct was the cauſe of any breach, ſhe would, when Mr. Marſhall came to town, endeavour all in her power to reconcile them; but theſe generous deſigns were ſoon changed for others of a very different nature, by a letter Mrs. Glanville received from her ſpouſe, which, as it was wrote in the height of his anger, expreſſed the warmeſt reſentment againſt his kinſman, and inadvertently mentioned his cauſeleſs jealouſy. This was what he ought, for his own ſake, to have concealed; but who is wiſe when they are angry? his lady took the alarm, and every recollection increaſed her uneaſineſs; ſhe remembered with how much warmth Betty had pleaded for Mr. Glanville before her marriage, and, however prepoſterous the concluſion, fancied this was a proof of her affection to his perſon. Yet, ſhe had the prudence to conceal her pain; but the innocent cauſe of it, was to be ſacrificed to her unjuſt reſentment.

As this was the only place where Betty could have any news of her lover, ſhe in a few days went to pay Mrs. Glanville a viſit; but that lady had ordered herſelf to be denied: on her going again ſhe received the ſame anſwer, and on her aſking if Mr. Glanville was come out of the country, was told, that he was, and was then in the houſe. She deſired to ſpeak with him, when the ſervant told her, that he was with his lady, and ſhe had better call another time.

This odd reception where ſhe had always been received with an open friendſhip, both ſurprized and afflicted her; but as ſhe had no notion of the reaſon, and thought that the ſervant might be thus forward in his advice, from his own impertinence, ſhe inſiſted on ſeeing his maſter immediately; but he flatly told her, that his miſtreſs had given him orders to carry no meſſage from her to him; however, if ſhe pleaſed, he would privately acquaint him with her calling, and tell him any meſſage ſhe pleaſed to leave.

Vexed at being treated ſo unworthily by one whom ſhe really loved, ſhe went out of the houſe in a violent paſſion, and without giving herſelf time to cool, ran to Mrs. Robinſon, where ſhe vented her rage in tears.

It was ſome time before ſhe could make this gentlewoman believe that her couſin acted from a motive of jealouſy; but as ſoon as ſhe was convinced, that this muſt be the caſe, ſhe comforted the afflicted girl, who began to be in dread, leſt ſhe ſhould loſe her friendſhip, by aſſuring her, that ſhe would go directly to her couſin, and clear up the whole affair.

Mrs. Glanville could hardly be brought to believe, that one in the ſituation Betty was in at the time when her huſband made her the propoſal of marriage, would have refuſed him for another, of whom ſhe could have but very diſtant hopes, and yet could be at any time cool enough to reſolve to give up theſe hopes to the duty ſhe owed a father, whom ſhe had hardly known long enough to love. Theſe ſentiments, her warm and precipitate temper taught her to think inconſiſtent, as they were ſo directly oppoſite to what ſhe herſelf would have felt in a like circumſtance, and from a principle of ſelf-love, which is common enough, attributed that to diſſimulation, which was the effect of a way of thinking, that raiſed the character of this almoſt friendleſs young woman greatly above her own, tho' ſurrounded with the advantages of eaſe and

affluence: however, as this lady's only fault was an unguarded heat, unattended with the black malevolence that ſometimes ſticks to minds which ſeem of a more moderate and equal caſt, there needed only to make her ſenſible that her ſuſpicions had wronged the perſons who had raiſed them, and ſhe was as aſſiduous in making them reparation, as ſhe had been violent in her reſentment for the ſuppoſed injury. Of this diſpoſition Betty, who for the future we ſhall call Miſs Hammond, as about this time ſhe was called by the name of her father, felt the moſt happy effects. Mrs. Robinſon had conquered all her kinſwoman's ſcruples, and had brought her to conſent to an interview with Miſs Hammond at her houſe: but a letter ſhe received from Mr. Marſhall, kept her from keeping this appointment.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XI.

A love quarrel made up, and an interview which will give pleaſure to a good-natured reader.

THE letter mentioned in the foregoing chapter, was given into Betty's hand as ſhe was coming from church, and ſhe was juſt going to return it, when ſhe caſt her eyes on the ſuperſcription, and immediately knew the hand. It was directed to her by her lately acquired name; but contained not one gratulation on her change of circumſtances: the lover ſeemed in no humour for compliment; for inſtead of the dear Betſy, which had in his former letters, charmed her eyes and her heart, the Madam at the top alarmed her fears for the contents; nor were thoſe fears without foundation. He blamed her for making uſe of his example, as an excuſe for her coldneſs; he told her, that ſhe might remember he had mentioned his being under uncommon obligations to his mother, and that he only behaved with duty and affection, in return for her unparalleled tenderneſs and care for his happineſs; but ſhould always ſcorn a ſlaviſh ſubmiſſion to the caprice of any one, let his obligations be what they would,

and he feared, ſhould never have art enough to make a merit, as ſhe did, of acting agreeably to her own inclinations. He confeſſed ſhe had made him unhappy; but as the dictates of the heart were not always in our own power, and were often affected by a change in the outward circumſtances, he would trouble her with no more reproaches. This letter, ſo unlike all ſhe had received, gave her inexpreſſible torment. She found very little relief, even from her tears. The afternoon of this day ſhe had appointed to ſee Mrs. Glanville, in hopes of learning ſomething of her dear lover; but this cool, tho' bitter, reſentment of a flight of heroiſm which her heart would never have let her have acted, made her unfit for company; beſides, the pride ſo natural to her ſex, made her reſolve to try at leaſt, to hide her concern from all who might inform him of her behaviour; but ſhe had no need of reſolutions againſt going, for by the time deſigned for her viſit, ſhe was in no condition to go any where. In the afternoon ſhe went again to church; but as her eyes were red with weeping, ſhe did not chuſe to ſit in her uſual place; but went up into the gallery, where ſhe beheld the man who had given her the letter in the morning, ſtanding on the ſtairs

that

that commanded a view of the whole church. He had on a horſeman's coat, with the cape muffled up over his chin, and when he gave her the letter, wore his hat flopped over a black wig, that ſufficiently diſguiſed him; and, as her father was juſt before her, he only ſpoke to her in a whiſper; but now his reverence for a place of worſhip obliged him to be without his hat, ſhe no ſooner had given him a look, than ſhe knew him to be her offended lover.

THIS unexpected meeting threw her into a tremor which ſhe could but ill conceal, tho' ſhe endeavoured it; ſhe hurried to a ſeat, but before ſhe reached it, fell ſenſeleſs on the boards. The hurry and confuſion that ſuch an accident cauſes in a publick place, directed all eyes to the ſpot where ſhe was; ſhe was ſoon known, and was conveyed home to her father's before ſhe came to herſelf, her lover aſſiſting her till ſhe was got into a coach, and carrying her up ſtairs in his arms, when ſhe came out of it. Her father was at this time from home, and Mr. Marſhall having ſent for a ſurgeon, was obliged to leave her to the care of her own ſex; but by a never-failing argument, perſuaded the maid to give him notice as ſoon as her miſtreſs recovered her ſenſes.

SHE remained ſo long without motion, that all about her were greatly alarmed for her life, and the patience of the lover was ſo much loſt in his anxiety, that he had been twice from a neighbouring tavern where he was ſtationed, to aſk after her. At length ſhe gave ſigns of returning life, but was ſome time before ſhe was well enough to talk. As ſoon as the people of the houſe, for they were in lodgings, had left her, the maid ſtept to the gentleman, to let him know ſhe was recovering; but that ſhe expected her maſter home every moment. Mr. Marſhall reſolved if poſſible to ſee her, and therefore deſired the girl to introduce him as the perſon who had aſſiſted in bringing her home; but ſhe objected to this, as her miſtreſs was in bed; however, ſhe promiſed to try what ſhe could do for him. On her return, ſhe found Joſeph's ſiſter with Miſs Hammond; for ſhe had been let in while ſhe had been talking to Mr. Marſhall. The maid now thought it impoſſible to do any thing that would entitle her to a ſecond taſte of the gentleman's bounty; when Mrs. Katherine, who being free in the family, was coming into the kitchen, for ſomething for her friend, caught Mr. Marſhall in the entry talking with the maid: notwithſtanding

his

his dreſs ſhe knew him, and immediately ſpoke to him, and he thinking he had now got a better advocate, left the girl, and earneſtly begged her to perſuade Miſs Hammond to ſee him; but as he thought the ſervant might be an enemy if not made a friend, he took care to give her a retaining fee.

The farmer's ſiſter, who knew nothing of there being any quarrel betwixt them, was aſtoniſhed that he ſhould need an interceſſor; but however undertook the commiſſion, and on her going to her friend, aſked leave to bring in a gentleman who wiſhed to ſee her, and who having taken a great deal of pains in bringing her home, had a right to her thanks. This Mrs. Katherine thought would conceal from the maid who he was, if it was thought neceſſary to keep his viſit a ſecret; but it had this further effect, which was not deſigned; for as the miſtreſs thought her friend meant no more than ſhe ſpoke, ſhe readily admitted him into the room, when perhaps had ſhe been certain who he was, female pride and female reſentment would have made her run counter to her own wiſhes, and keep up an appearance of anger, when her heart had no proſpect of happineſs or peace, but in an unreſerved reconcilement. On his ap-

proaching the bed, ſhe, in a plaintive voice, ſaid to her friend, "What, you too "try to make me unhappy! why am I "impoſed on? I underſtood you that I "was to return thanks to the perſon who "brought me home, and not to this "gentleman, who made me need his aſ-"ſiſtance." This reproach Mr. Marſhall anſwered in terms which ſufficiently ſhewed how little he deſerved it: he told her, that ſo far from deſigning her any injury, if his life and fortune would contribute to her happineſs, they were both at her ſervice, and then ſnatching one of her hands with a tranſport that perhaps pleaſed, as much as it ſtartled his ſick miſtreſs, preſſed it to his lips, crying out, "You muſt, "nay, you ſhall, forgive me; ſince no-"thing but exceſs of love is my crime. "I cannot bear that even a father ſhould "have a greater ſhare in your heart than "myſelf. You know I love you; that I "have long loved you, then how could "you think I could bear your ſo coolly "reſolving to give me up to the demands "of duty, at a time too when I had re-"ſolved to ſacrifice every intereſt to my "love?"

Miss Hammond, in ſpite of all her efforts, was incapable of longer diſſembling indifference or anger, and had dropt

dropt on his hand, which ſtill held hers, ſome tears of reconcilement, when the maid ran haſtily into the room, to let them know her maſter was coming up. This made the lover withdraw his hand, and retire to a farther diſtance.

## CHAP. XII.

Mr. Marſhall ſurprized in his miſtreſs's apartment by her father, to whom he has the good fortune to appear agreeable.

ON Mr. Hammond's entering the room, the young gentleman, without ſeeming diſconcerted, aſſumed an air that exactly ſuited his preſent appearance, and in a blunt manner told him, that he was ſo concerned for the young woman his daughter, that he could not help coming to aſk how ſhe did. Mrs. Katherine informed Mr. Hammond, that his daughter was taken ill at church, and was by the care of the gentleman brought home, that when ſhe came ſhe knew him, for ſhe had ſeen him at her brother's in the country, and as Miſs Hammond was now better, ſhe brought him in to receive her thanks. All this, tho' ſtrictly true, was, in regard to the old man, a deception; how-

ever his daughter never opened her lips to join in the deceit, tho' ſhe was pleaſed at hearing her father thank her lover for the ſervice he had done her, and expreſs the ſenſe he had of this obligation with a warmth, that ſhewed the ſtrength of his affection, and in a manner, that diſcovered no diſlike to the freedom he had taken in coming to his houſe. Mr. Marſhall ſtill retained the air of a mere country gentleman, and accepted with a plain freedom of the good man's invitation to partake of a bottle with him below ſtairs.

WHEN they were gone down, his daughter complained to her friend, that ſhe feared her father would be offended, when he ſhould know who he was, and, to the ſurprize of Katherine, proteſted, that ſhe would not deceive him, tho' ſhe might by that means, have the liberty of Mr. Marſhall's company. As this was a ſcrupuloſity which Mrs. Katherine did not expect, ſhe was vexed that ſhe had ſaid any thing about him, and the more, as Mr. Hammond had laid her under ſome obligations; but Betty aſſured her, that ſhe ſhould not loſe his friendſhip on her account; for ſhe was reſolved to venture his anger, and to own the cauſe of her illneſs.

MR.

Mr. Marſhall, in the courſe of his converſation with the father of his miſtreſs, mentioned, as if by accident, the beauty of his daughter; when the good man from a full heart, launched out in her praiſe, and with an air of confidence, ſaid, that he believed he was as happy in his girl, as any parent; but he could wiſh, that he had reaſon to think her happy too; for he could ſee plain enough, tho' ſhe ſtrove to hide it, that her thoughts ran after a young gentleman who ſhe fancied, loved her, and tho' ſhe had had ſeveral good offers, ſhe reſolved to die a maid if ſhe could not have him. On Mr. Marſhall's enquiring the reaſon of his diſlike to himſelf, he ſaid, For his part, he did not know how to behave among great folks, and if his girl married above herſelf, ſhe would be loſt to him; for he could neither cringe nor creep. "And "why, Sir," ſays the young gentleman with a ſmile, "do you think you ſhould "be obliged to do either? can you ima- "gine your daughter's huſband could ex- "pect any ſuch ſubmiſſion, tho' he were "a duke? I am ſure, if I was happy "enough to be ſo nearly related to you, "I ſhould think I owed you the ſame re- "ſpect I did my own father." "Ay, "ay," returned Mr. Hammond; "but

"this

" this is a fine town ſpark I'm inform-
" ed, tho' I never ſaw him; and, I ſup-
" poſe, would think it a diſgrace to be
" called ſon by ſuch a plain old man as
" I am; but I believe there is now no
" danger of that, ſince if he had any
" thoughts of the girl, he would before
" now have found ſome means of ſeeing
" her." " Perhaps it was not in his
" power," anſwered the pleaſed lover:
" Fiddle faddle," replied the honeſt old man, " I was young myſelf once, and I
" am ſure it would not have been in the
" power of any body, to have kept me
" from the girl I loved." " And yet,"
returned Mr. Marſhall, " if you were to
" find him with your daughter, you would
" be highly diſpleaſed." " Not with
" him; he owes me no obedience," replied Mr. Hammond, " tho' I ſhould
" with my daughter: yet I believe, I
" ſhould forgive her too." " Then," anſwered Mr. Marſhall with much emotion,
" dear Sir, behold him here. I can carry
" on the deceit no longer; forgive me,
" if I ſay your daughter's happineſs is as
" dear to me, as it can be to you: ſhe
" has long been the delight of my life,
" and, if you will give me leave, I will
" ſhow my tenderneſs to her, by my re-
" gard to you. This letter will convince

" you,

" you, at what rate ſhe prizes your con-
" tent."

On this, he held to him the letter his daughter had wrote to Mrs. Glanville, which his couſin had given him, in compliance with the advice of his wife. The old man, tho' a good deal prejudiced in favour of the young gentleman, was nettled at the thought of being made a dupe, and returned the letter without looking at it; ſaying, that he did not doubt but that was a contrivance as well as the reſt: for ſince the young huſſey could ſham ſickneſs ſo well, ſhe would make no ſcruple of writing any thing to make a fool of her father. Mr. Marſhall, as he well might, proteſted her innocence of any deſign of deceiving him, and ſaid, that he much dreaded her anger for the harmleſs ſtratagem he had made uſe of to remove any bad impreſſion he might have conceived againſt him; " And who told
" you I had any diſlike?" replied the blunt old man, " you could not have
" known that, if the young gipſey had
" not told you of it. Anſwer me that:
" you know who has need of a good me-
" mory." The young gentleman bridled his reſentment, which in ſpite of all his tenderneſs, began to riſe at his being in a manner given the lie, and again preſent-

ed

ed him the letter which his daughter had ſent to Mrs. Glanville, entreating him to look over it, and ſatisfy himſelf, that his dear daughter was without blame. Mr. Hammond was now prevailed on to read it; the ſtrong ſenſe it expreſſed of filial duty, greatly charmed the heart of this ſenſible old man, who alſo received very favourable impreſſions of the merit of the young gentleman who now ſtood watching his looks with an anxious concern, that ſpoke the exceſs of his tenderneſs better than all the rodomontade of paſſion.

THIS did not eſcape the obſervation of the moody old gentleman; but as it grew late, he ſuffered Mr. Marſhall to take leave, without letting him know any more of his ſentiments, than what he could conjecture from his looks, which had loſt a little of the ſeverity he had aſſumed on the lover's diſcovering himſelf; indeed when he waited on him to the door, he told him in a tone that had a mixture of the affable and angry, that he ſhould be at home the next day, and was at his ſervice to be made a further fool on, if he thought it worth his while to give him his company.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XIII.

Miſs Hammond, by being above diſſimulation, gains the confidence of her father, who indulges her in the liberty of ſeeing Mr. Marſhall.

WHATEVER Mr. Hammond thought of Mr. Marſhall's behaviour, he was no ſooner gone, than he went into his daughter's chamber, determining within himſelf to diſcountenance or favour her wiſhes, according as ſhe deſerved his indulgence, by the candour or diſingenuity of her own proceeding. He began by aſking after her health, as her anxiety at what would be the conſequence of this interview, had given a diſorder to her features, which was as viſible as if cauſed by bodily pain. On her telling him, ſhe was ſtill low and faint, he replied with a ſmile, he hoped ſhe would be better the next day. "I think," continued he, "its a good clever man that was "ſo kind to take care of you home. I "tell you, for all you ſeem to have ſuch "a diſlike to us country folks, we are as "good-natured at the bottom as the fine "bred Londoners, tho' we don't make "ſuch a rout about it." Miſs Hammond,

mond, in ſpite of her uneaſineſs, could not forbear a ſmile at the deception ſhe thought her father was under; but having reſolved how to act before he came up, ſhe told him, that he was miſtaken if he took that gentleman for one bred in the country. "I cannot bear, Sir," continued ſhe, "to ſee you impoſed on, for tho' "I run the hazard of your anger in letting you know his name, yet I think myſelf obliged to tell you, it is Marſhall, "the very perſon you have ſo often talked of with diſlike; but let me beg "you to believe, however appearances "may be againſt me, he was brought "here without my conſent."

MR. Hammond, as much as poſſible, concealed the ſatisfaction that his daughter's candour gave him, and replied in a tone half ſevere, "Yes to be ſure, without your knowledge; but ſince you are "ſo good at plotting, I ſhall rid myſelf "of you as faſt as I can. I expect a "gentleman here to-morrow that I like, "as well as you do him, who, I find, "wanted to impoſe on your father, ſo I "expect you to ſee him, and to like him "too; or you and I ſhall quarrel, I can "aſſure you. If you would have me cre-"dit what you ſay to me, you muſt at "leaſt, let me ſee that you try to ob-

"lige

" lige me: and if on trial," added he, in a milder voice, on ſeeing the tears ſtarting from her eyes; " you find it " impoſſible for you to be happy with " him, I ſhan't force you: ſo don't be " frighted." He then bid her a good night, and left her, as did alſo Mrs. Katherine.

As ſoon as Miſs Hammond was alone, ſhe revolved in her mind the tranſactions of the preceeding day, and tho' ſhe felt ſome little uneaſineſs at the proofs ſhe had given of what now appeared a too great ſenſibility to her lover, yet the recollection of the ſacrifice ſhe had made to her father, was attended with no regret; ſhe even entertained ſome ſlight hopes that ſhe ſhould be able to bring him to approve of her love: but when this new lover recurred to her mind, ſhe had a good deal of dread, leſt her father ſhould call her refuſing his addreſſes obſtinacy; for ſhe was well aſſured, it was impoſſible ſhe ſhould like him, tho' he poſſeſſed every charm that could render him agreeable. She even, on this occaſion, had not enough of the coquette to wiſh to appear amiable. So on her riſing, dreſſed herſelf in only a clean diſhabille, in which ſhe continued all day, tho' reminded by her father, with a kind of ſpightful ſmile,

that

that ſhe had certainly forgot, it was part of the character of a fine lady to wiſh to pleaſe, tho' they often reſolved never to be pleaſed. She anſwered in a tone that ſhewed her uneaſineſs at this raillery, that it was not out of diſreſpect either to him, or his friend, that ſhe did not dreſs; but that ſhe was not entirely free from the diſorder ſhe had been in the day before, and ſhe ſhould be much obliged to him, if he would diſpenſe with her ſeeing the gentleman till ſhe was better. "No, no," returned the old man with a poſitive air; "no ſuch matter; you were well enough "yeſterday to have a man in your "bed-chamber, ſo ſure you may, to ob- "lige your father, ſtay in a parlour to- "day, without offending your nicety."

JUST as Mr. Hammond was ſpeaking, a ſervant brought word, that a gentleman wanted to ſpeak with him; he with precipitation, as if to ſee an old friend, left the room; but returned immediately, introducing, to the aſtoniſhment and delight of his daughter, Mr. Marſhall, to whom he ſaid as he entered, in a voice perfectly affable, "Whatever good opinion you "young men are apt to entertain of your- "ſelves, I aſſure you, I had much ado, "to make the chit ſee you." The lover not leſs pleaſed then his miſtreſs, at find-

ing

ing the old gentleman in ſo good a temper, replied with vivacity, that he flattered himſelf it was only to encreaſe the bleſſing, by making him owe it to his commands, that ſhe had ſeemed to refuſe. "Nay, like enough," returned Mr. Hammond, "for I am but an ill diſſembler, "ſo I don't know, but the huſſey ſuſpect-"ed who was a coming, tho' ſhe made "ſuch a rout about it." On this his daughter anſwered with a look and accent that ſufficiently ſhewed, how much ſhe was elevated with the preſent alteration of his humour, that ſhe had not the leaſt notion who was to be their gueſt, nor could now imagine, to whom ſhe owed the change of his ſentiments from what they were laſt night; "for I can't think, Sir," ſhe continued, with the moſt inſinuating air, "that you commanded me not to ſee "this gentleman, only becauſe you had a "right to my obedience, and yet you "brought him yourſelf." The old man replied haſtily, "So, ſo, this is very "pretty, becauſe I once indulge you in "your humour, I find you will work it "up into a reaſon, why you ſhould al-"ways have it. True woman! now I "ſuppoſe you want ſadly to know, what "makes me act ſo whimſically; but once "for all, I have my reaſons, which you

"ſhan't

" ſhan't yet know. I am obliged to go
" out, and if this gentleman likes his com-
" pany, perhaps I ſhan't be ſorry to find
" him here at my return." On this, Mr. Hammond left them without any further ceremony.

## CHAP. XIV.

From the reading of which ſome will probably infer, that Betty had more pride than prudence, and more obſtinacy than either love or good nature.

THE ſatisfaction felt by Miſs Hammond, at having her father's ſanction to her being in the company of her much valued lover, cannot be conceived by any mind that wants her tender ſenſe of duty, or that is incapable of the extatic ſweets of a chaſte affection: her delight ſprang to her eyes, and gliſtened thro' an unwilling tear, which the charmed Mr. Marſhall kiſſed off in a rapture, that made him a little forget the diſtance at which ſhe had always kept him. She chid him for the ruffle he had given her, in terms that ſhewed as much affection as anger, tho' ſhe ſpoke in a manner that convinced him, ſhe meant to deter him from a re-

petition of his fault, which I believe, is often far from being the deſign of many of thoſe ladies, who would be thought to reckon a ſtolen kiſs among the deadly ſins.

To make her preſent bliſs more compleat, the tranſported lover told her, that his mother, touched with compaſſion for his uneaſineſs, had promiſed no longer to oppoſe his happineſs, than till ſhe was convinced that his affection was not placed on an unworthy object. "I look on this, "my dear," he continued, "as a full "grant of all I wiſh for: I have ſuch an "opinion of my mother's judgment, that "I am ſure, ſhe need only ſee and con-"verſe with my dear girl, to have every "doubt raiſed to her prejudice entirely "removed." To this Miſs Betſy anſwered with a ſmile, that his good opinion was far from being indifferent to her; but that ſhe feared he much overrated her value; "beſides," ſhe added in a ſerious voice, "can you think I could "be content to be made a ſight of; if "nothing but my going to your mother "can remove her unjuſt ſuſpicion, I be-"lieve I muſt for ever labour under the "misfortune of her diſlike: for tho', Sir, "I am far inferior to you in point of for-"tune, I can't think that a reaſon for "my doing any one act that would be ridi-

"ridiculous in your equal, ſince every "meanneſs I was guilty of, would ſtill "enhance the difference."

MR. Marſhall ſeemed for a moment diſconcerted; but, on a little recollection, was rather pleaſed than offended, at the quick ſenſe ſhe diſcovered of the propriety of action; he told her, that it was far from his deſign to have her ſubject to any mortifications, on account of the accidental difference of circumſtances, and that the greateſt advantage he hoped to receive from riches, was, that he ſhould have it in his power to make her happy; "but, my "dear," he continued, with the moſt tender air, "let me entreat you for my "ſake, not to carry your ſcruples too "far; you have no inexorable tyrant to "deal with; but a lady who knows how "to make allowance for the diffidence of "modeſt merit. I flattered myſelf that I "ſhould meet with no obſtacles on your "part, though I dreaded your father. "You know I have been degraded to a "footman, a diſguiſe that has not been "without its mortifications; then let me "not have the pain of thinking, that "my Betſy is behind hand with me in "affection: that will indeed make us un-"equal in a point of conſequence; every "thing elſe is a meer nothing." In vain

vain did he try every argument he could urge, in defence of her paying his mother a viſit; after all he could ſay, he found himſelf ſtill unable to conquer her reluctance to the propoſal, and as ſhe appeared a little chagrined at his ſo ſtrenuouſly inſiſting on it, he dropped it for that time.

## CHAP. XV.

### In which Mr. Marſhall ſtill continues ſpeaking.

THE converſation then turned on her being ſo unaccountably carried away, when Mr. Marſhall gave her a relation of what he knew of the affair. "Soon after I ſent you the letter," ſaid he, "in which I wiſhed you to come to "town, I received one myſelf, which as "it was marked as coming from the "neareſt poſt town to the village where "I left you, I opened it with the greateſt eagerneſs, in hopes of hearing of "the welfare of my dear girl, though I "plainly ſaw that the ſuperſcription was "wrote by another hand. But, oh heavens! what was my terror and aſtoniſhment, when I read the contents! It "was wrote by a fellow whom I had

" diſcharged juſt before I came out of
" the country, for talking of you in a
" diſreſpectful manner. He informed me,
" that my grandfather, inſtigated by the
" ſervant of the farmer with whom you
" lived, had tempted him by the pro-
" miſe of preſent reward, and future fa-
" vour, to join in an attempt to carry
" you to Liverpool, and force you on
" board a veſſel which lay there, the ma-
" ſter of which was under great obliga-
" tions to the old gentleman. This ſcheme
" was carried on by the fellow whom
" your friend the farmer had turned out
" of doors, the captain or maſter of the
" ſloop and himſelf, who, he ſaid, was
" drunk with rage, as well as liquor,
" when he conſented to the vile propo-
" ſal; but that the ſight of ſome high-
" waymen who gave his companions ter-
" rible apprehenſions, delivered him from
" the moſt dreadful diſtreſs, as they hin-
" dered him from executing a deſign
" which might have rendered me for ever
" unhappy; for my grandfather had ſti-
" pulated with the ſeaman, that he ſhould
" marry the young woman as ſoon as
" they arrived at the place to which they
" were bound; but that they had been
" cautious enough not to let him know
" where that was: that the captain had
" told

" told the countryman, who was maſked,
" and never ſpoke in his hearing, that he
" fancied he ſhould be unable to perſuade
" the girl to conſent to be his wife, ex-
" cept he frightned her into it, by threat-
" ning to debauch her. In conſequence
" of this reſolution he treated you rude-
" ly, and if my fellow, (as he tells me,
" but with how much truth, you know
" beſt) had not threatened to leave them,
" he would have carried his ſhocking
" brutality farther then mere mena-
" ces. He then gives me an account
" of your chuſing to go with the
" robbers, and of one of them carrying
" you away behind him. I have given
" you, my dear," continued Mr. Mar-
ſhall, " the contents of the letter, but no
" words can deſcribe the horror, the rage,
" the diſtreſs it gave me. I believe had
" I had the vile writer in my reach, I
" ſhould have made no ſcruple of ſacri-
" ficing him to my vengeance; but a
" little reflection made me conſider him
" as a tool beneath my notice. My mo-
" ther, who was at this time at home,
" was alarmed at the alteration ſhe be-
" held in my features, and in the ten-
" dereſt manner, entreated me to let her
" know what was the matter. I gave
" her the letter I had juſt received, at

" which ſhe ſhewed as much diſlike as
" aſtoniſhment; but at the ſame time
" begged me for her ſake, if I could not
" be prevailed on for my own, not to
" quarrel with her father. This with dif-
" ficulty ſhe brought me to promiſe, on
" condition ſhe would permit me to go
" in queſt of you. I ſet out the next
" morning on my hopeleſs purſuit, and
" arrived at the houſe of the honeſt far-
" mer the day after he died. I was then
" on the point of betraying what I knew
" of the fellow who I found was to be
" his heir; but a conſideration that my
" grand-father muſt be involved in the
" ſame trouble, ſtopped my tongue. In
" the tumult of my thoughts I forgot to
" enquire after the circumſtances of your
" friend's ſiſter. Diſpirited and fatigued,
" I returned to my grand-father's, without
" being able to gain the leaſt intelli-
" gence. I was indeed convinced of the
" folly of ſuch expectations, as ſoon as
" I came to the free uſe of my reaſon,
" which was in a manner ſtupified with
" rage and grief. I there had a ſevere fit
" of illneſs, which confined me ſix weeks
" to my room: when my grand-father's
" aſſiduity and care during this interval,
" convinced me, that his unjuſtifiable
" conduct proceeded from a miſtaken
" zeal

" zeal for my happineſs. As ſoon as I " was well enough to give orders to a " young fellow, who, tho' my grand- " father's ſervant, I believed to be " faithful to my intereſt, I ſent him to " the village where I had left the far- " mer's afflicted ſiſter, to enquire if ſhe " had yet heard of you, and carry her a " trifling preſent, which I reproached " myſelf for being ſo careleſs as to neg- " lect giving her before: and this ho- " neſt fellow brought me the delightful " news of your being arrived in perfect " health at the village: and that both " you and your late friend's ſiſter had ſet " out from thence two days before his " arrival there.

" INSPIRED by my tenderneſs, I was " haſtily preparing for my journey to " London, which I now believed, held " what my fond heart eſteemed moſt dear, " when my mother, whom I forgot to " tell you, came down to me on the firſt " notice ſhe received of my illneſs and " danger, hindered my journey, by her " being ſuddenly taken ſick. As I was " ſure that ſhe owed her illneſs to the " anxiety and fatigue ſhe had ſuffered on " my account, gratitude and duty ob- " liged me to comply with her entreaties, " and to ſtay till ſhe was better, and the

" letter you wrote to Mrs. Glanville, " confirmed me in this reſolution. I now " confeſs, my dear, I put on a coldneſs " in my letter to you, that my heart was " quite a ſtranger to, in hopes of diſ- " covering your real ſentiments, which " I ſtill flattered myſelf were in my fa- " vour.

" ON my return home, after I had " ſeen you, I received a note from my " couſin Glanville, which in the kindeſt " manner, and without the leaſt remains " of reſentment, gave me a preſſing in- " vitation to come to his houſe; I went " directly, and to my inexpreſſible ſatiſ- " faction there learnt, that my charming " maid had repented of her cruelty, and " ſhewed too many ſigns of her tender- " neſs and eſteem, to deſerve my re- " proaches. My couſin alſo told me, " that his ſpouſe expected to ſee you that " evening at the houſe of a relation. " My heart fluttered at the thought of " making one of the party, which I re- " ſolved to do, tho' I am not much " known to your friend Mrs. Robinſon. " In order that the hours I was to paſs " before I could go with my couſin " might ſeem leſs tireſome, I went to the " church which I had ſeen you come from " in the morning, where I thought I

" might

" might poſſibly ſee you without being
" taken notice of myſelf. You bruſhed
" by me on the ſtairs, and your confu-
" ſion and bluſhes filled me with a tran-
" ſport which the ſolemnity of the place
" alone could have made me conceal;
" but how was I terrified on ſeeing you
" the moment after pale and inſenſible!
" Enraged at my own folly and raſhneſs,
" I neither feared your father, nor thought
" of my dreſs, but hurried to ſupport
" you. What afterwards happened you
" know; but I am quite at a loſs to
" gueſs to what I owe the happy change
" of your father's temper, and from
" what reaſon he permits my preſent
" happineſs. I had repreſented him to
" myſelf, as a man rough and boiſterous
" as the element he has been uſed to;
" but am agreeably ſurprized to find he
" has a ſoul capable of the moſt tender
" ſenſations: for while he launched out
" in the juſt praiſes of his charming
" daughter, his mind ſhone in his coun-
" tenance, and almoſt ſmoothed the fur-
" rows of time: I could have called him
" my father, and felt at that moment too
" much affection to the good old man to
" be able to diſſemble."

THIS relation, interrupted as it was by the moſt delightful, tho' chaſte endearments!

took them up great part of the time the old gentleman was abſent; for tho', to avoid the diſagreeable repetition of *he ſaid*, and *ſhe returned*, I have made the young gentleman the only ſpeaker, as I have ſometimes done in the former part of this ſtory, yet I would not have my readers believe ſo great an improbability, as that a ſprightly female could be content to be a meer liſtener for more than an hour. Indeed in juſtice to the repenting fellow who had drove the coach in which ſhe had been carried away, ſhe was obliged to confirm his own report, of his endeavouring to ſave her from the worſt of misfortunes, by obliging the villain who rode with her, to deſiſt from his brutality, under the penalty of his betraying the whole contrivance: for ſhe was by no means one of thoſe nice ladies, who, perhaps, to ſpare themſelves the confuſion of a bluſh, would have choſe to let this juſtly offended maſter, have a worſe opinion of his ſervant than he really deſerved. Nay, ſhe even condeſcended to plead for him, on Mr. Marſhall's telling her that he heard he was reduced to the utmoſt wretchedneſs, as he had been out of place for want of a character, and had moſt of the money he had received for wages on his diſcharge, taken from him by the highwaymen.

highwaymen. She obſerved, that it was not in the leaſt probable he ſhould meet with a temptation of the like kind in another place; that it would give her great uneaſineſs, but to think of a fellow creature being in want and miſery on her account, and that ſhe thought the poor wretch deſerved ſome compaſſion, if not reward, for his intelligence. "If theſe "are your ſentiments," returned the delighted lover, pleaſed that the ſoul of his miſtreſs was ſo nearly allied to his own, "you will approve of what I have done "for him; for tho' I could not till I was "convinced of the ſincerity of his repen-"tance, take him again as my own ſer-"vant, or recommend him to the ſervice "of any other gentleman, I ordered my "mother's ſervants to entertain him in "quality of a helper, to keep him from "want, and my heart really akes for the "poor fellow when I ſee him ſculk out of "ſight, if by accident he falls in my "way."

On Mr. Hammond's return he joined in the converſation, which became more general, with a viſible ſatisfaction that was extreamly pleaſing to the young couple, and Mr. Marſhall ſpent that and many more evenings with his miſtreſs and her father, till at length the old

man's affection to him fell not vaſtly ſhort of what he felt for his girl: and perhaps there was more real happineſs in this little company, than in the moſt ſparkling aſſemblies of the great, ſince inſtead of envying, they reverberated each other's joy. Here was no affected coyneſs on the part of the lady, no coquetiſh airs, nor aſſumed petulancy to ſhew her power in teizing her lover; who, on his ſide, loved her ardently, tho' he did not like a ſalamander, live in conſtant flames, or talk of arrows and darts like an Indian archer.

## CHAP. XVI.

### Containing the hiſtory of one gentleman and two ladies.

THE tranquillity of one of theſe evenings was a little diſturbed, by Mr. Hammond's appearing melancholy and thoughtful, his daughter was alarmed leſt any part of Mr. Marſhall's conduct had given him offence; but he ſoon ſatisfied her importunate curioſity, by letting her know that he had been that day to ſee a gentleman who was his friend in the worſt of his misfortune, whom he found juſt expiring: but what had affected him,

he

he ſaid, more than his friend's death, was the ſituation of a gentlewoman to whom the deceaſed was on the point of being married, and who was left entirely without ſupport, when juſt in the proſpect of a genteel fortune. The concern which the compaſſionate old man ſhewed for this lady, engaged his daughter and her lover to wiſh a recital of her ſtory, which he gave them as follows.

'I MUST,' ſays he, 'give you ſome 'little account of my late friend, that 'you may judge of the lady's preſent 'miſery, by the happineſs ſhe has loſt. 'He was, as he himſelf told me, mar-'ried when a very young man, to a 'woman who brought him a pretty for-'tune, and who was thought extreamly 'handſome; but as he was bred to the 'ſea, and was ſecond mate to a man of 'war, he had not lived with her above a 'twelvemonth, when he was obliged to 'leave her. At their ſeparation the lady 'expreſſed the moſt affectionate ſorrow, 'and the huſband was forced to ſtifle his 'own concern, leſt it ſhould encreaſe hers. 'While he was abroad, he was raiſed in 'his poſt, and removed to another ſhip; 'but this advancement was attended with 'the diſagreeable circumſtance of his be-'ing obliged to be longer abſent from

'his beloved wife than he expected from
'his firſt appointment. At length, the
'ſhip in which he went from England,
'being ordered home, he ſent by the
'hands of the ſecond mate, who had
'gained that office by my friend's remo-
'val, a preſent to his wife of the pro-
'duce of the country where he was ſta-
'tioned. The lady received this token
'of his affection and tenderneſs with
'much pleaſure. In the abſence of her
'huſband, ſhe lived with her parents, as
'ſhe was ſtill very young, and by her
'beauty might have been more taken
'notice of than they thought was conſi-
'ſtent with the reputation of a married
'woman: but alas, all theſe prudent pre-
'cautions were rendered ineffectual, by
'the perfidious villain who was entruſted
'with her huſband's letter and preſent.
'My friend had earneſtly recommended
'him to his wife, and her relations, as a
'man of worth and honeſty, and the re-
'ception they gave him, was anſwerable
'to the regard they had for him who in-
'tereſted himſelf in his behalf. In ſhort,
'the wife received him with a warmth of
'friendſhip, which the baſe wretch mi-
'ſtook for a paſſion which ſhe was far
'from feeling; but as her father's houſe
'was no proper place to make any ad-
'vantage

'vantage of the great regard he fancied 'ſhe had to his perſon, he conceived a 'deſign which he thought would at once 'anſwer all his wiſhes. He made, or at 'leaſt pretended to make, an entertain-'ment at a tavern, to which he told the 'young wife of his friend, he had invi-'ted ſeveral of his relations of both 'ſexes, to rejoice with him on his lately 'acquired promotion, and requeſted the 'favour of her company along with her 'mother. In regard to the old gentle-'woman, this was a meer compliment; 'for he well knew ſhe never went out, 'on account of her being very lame; but 'the invitation prevented all ſuſpicion, 'and the unwary young creature was be-'trayed into a ſnare that coſt her her 'life. She, with the approbation of her 'parents, went to the place appointed by 'her huſband's friend, and on her being 'uſhered by him into the room, ſhe ex-'preſſed great ſurprize to find none of 'his friends come, and ſeemed inclined 'to return home; but inſinuating that 'poſſibly his meſſenger might have made 'ſome miſtake as to the time, or his 'friends might ſtay for each other, he 'made uſe of many arguments to induce 'her to ſtay, when being unable to de-'tain her longer by ſuch ſubterfuges, he

'threw off the maſk, and confeſſed his 'paſſion, tho' in the humbleſt manner. 'The lady repulſed his impudence with a 'reſolution that convinced him ſhe was 'not to be won by his flattery, and inſiſt-'ed on returning home immediately; he 'then changed his firſt purpoſe, which 'was undoubtedly to make her a partner 'in his crimes by her own conſent, and 'told her, it was now too late to recede; 'for if ſhe left him in his preſent de-'ſpair, he ſhould revenge her coldneſs 'on her huſband, whom he would find 'the way to reach before ſhe ſhould be 'able to ſend him the leaſt intelligence of 'his deſign. This threat terrified the 'poor young creature beyond expreſſion, 'who burſting into a flood of tears, con-'deſcended to entreat the wretch for her 'huſband's life, which he ſwore he would 'not touch if ſhe would forgive him, 'and promiſe not to inform her friends 'of his paſſion, of which he now pretended 'to repent. In ſhort, the good-natured 'lady was brought to promiſe every thing 'he propoſed, and as he had pretended 'to ſend for a coach, ſhe now without 'much fear, conſented to ſtay ſometime 'longer in his company, when either the 'agitation ſhe had been thrown into at 'his ſcandalous propoſal and vile threats,

'cauſed

'caused the wine she had drank to take
'an uncommon effect for the quantity,
'or he had made use of the diabolical se-
'crets of medicine, and had given her
'some drug which stupified her senses to
'such a degree, that she at last suffered
'him to satisfy his desires, and continued
'with him all night.

'This false step was concealed by her
'tender parents from all the world, tho'
'they lamented her fall in secret; but
'alas! the effects became but too visi-
'ble. My friend, after an absence of
'two years, returned to England, where
'instead of finding a joyful welcome from
'a fond wife, she, at the news of his
'approach, fled from her father's house.
'This behaviour, of which he did not
'want informers, gave him much unea-
'siness, tho' he had no notion of the mo-
'tive; but as it was impossible long to
'conceal the reason of her flight, she be-
'ing at that time very big with child,
'the afflicted old lady, her mother, made
'him acquainted with the extent of his
'misfortune, entreating him, in the most
'suppliant manner, not to make their
'common grief the jest of the town, by
'demanding a publick satisfaction.

'My friend, who had promised to
'himself a long time of happiness in the

'com-

'company of a wife for whom he had
'the moſt faithful affection, in the firſt
'tranſport of his rage and diſappoint-
'men, was near doing an act of deſpera-
'tion on himſelf, as the wretch who had
'injured him was not in his power; but
'a little recollection brought him to his
'reaſon; he determined to behave with
'decency and calmneſs, reſolving never
'more to ſee his wife; for he was at that
'time unacquainted with the extenuati-
'ons of her folly. He kept his word,
'and as ſoon as poſſible went again to
'ſea, with a firm reſolution never to re-
'turn to England till he had news of her
'death. His voluntary baniſhment was
'however but of ſhort continuance; for
'the poor lady after the birth of a dead
'child, languiſhed only a few months in
'a deep conſumption, before her death
'ſet him free.

'THIS diſappointment in his firſt af-
'fection, ſet his heart quite looſe to love,
'and gave him an unhappy prejudice
'againſt women, whom he now looked
'on as a kind of neceſſary evils, which a
'wiſe man ſhould make ſubſervient to
'his pleaſures, without endangering his
'fortune or his peace, by putting either
'in their poſſeſſion. In conformity to
'theſe principles he kept a miſtreſs, and

as

'as he himſelf has told me, was in great 'danger of turning a meer rake, when 'his wife's father dying, left him his 'executor. In the execution of this of-'fice, he was obliged to look over ſome 'papers belonging to the gentleman juſt 'dead, among which he found a letter 'directed to himſelf. On his opening it, 'he ſaw it was wrote in the hand of his 'deceaſed wife; it was from this, which 'was wrote when no worldly conſidera-'tion could induce her to diſſemble, as 'ſhe was on the verge of eternity, that 'he learnt the circumſtances of villainy I 'have related.

'THIS letter, which had been kept 'from him by the death of the young 'lady's mother, which happened ſoon 'after that of her unfortunate child, gave 'a new turn to his way of thinking, and 'cured him of his unlawful engagement: 'he grew melancholy, and reproached 'himſelf as the murderer of his wife, by 'a too inexorable reſentment. To di-'vert his gloom he again went abroad, 'was raiſed to the poſt of captain, and 'ſtaying many years without coming to 'England, acquired a large fortune; 'when he returned home, which was about 'two years ſince, he ſhewed his affection 'to his late wife, by taking into his fa-

'mily

'mily a lady who was related to her, 'who had been ſtripped of a large for-'tune thro' the extravagance of her bro-'ther, who had not only ſquandered 'away twenty thouſand pounds, which his 'careful father had been many years gain-'ing, but had added to the loſs of his 'own fortune, that of his ſiſter's, with 'the additional cruelty of drawing in the 'poor lady to ſtand jointly engaged with 'him for two thouſand pounds more than 'ſhe had to pay. The ſweetneſs of her 'diſpoſition, and her chearful reſignation 'to her hard lot, gave my friend ſuch a 'ſtrong impreſſion in her favour, that he 'reſolved to marry her, and once more 'reſtore her to a ſtate of affluence, and 'had actually put his reſolution in pra-'ctice, had not ſhe herſelf prevented him, 'by honeſtly informing him of the bond. 'This cauſed ſome delay, as the credi-'tor, tho' her known indigence had long 'kept him from being troubleſome, now 'inſiſted on his whole debt, if the lady 'married the captain; however, he at 'length agreed to take one thouſand 'pounds, and give her a diſcharge. This 'my friend paid, and there ſeemed to be 'the higheſt probability of their mutual 'happineſs, when the intended bride-'groom was ſeized with a paralytick ill-

'neſs

'neſs that took away his ſenſes. Nay, 'as if this poor lady was born to be 'tantalized with falſe hopes, he recover-'ed juſt enough to be capable of making 'his will, in which he aſſigned her a 'handſome fortune, but died without be-'ing able to ſign it. His death reduced 'her to worſe misfortunes than his gene-'roſity relieved her from, as ſhe has loſt 'the favour of an aunt who afforded her 'ſome reſource, till ſhe contradicted her 'advice, by going to live with the cap-'tain as his houſekeeper, tho' it was her 'contemptuous behaviour that drove her 'to it; for ſhe was always fond of ſhewing 'her in a light of dependance. To make 'her yet more wretched, my friend's 'nephew, who is heir at law, treats her 'with inſolence and contempt, and in-'ſiſts on her immediate removal out of 'a houſe now become his, when not a 'week ago he, to appearance, paid her 'the moſt duteous reſpect as his future 'aunt.

'I HAVE,' continued Mr. Hammond, 'given this poor lady an invitation to live 'with you till ſhe can ſuit herſelf better, 'and I hope you will find yourſelf happy 'in a companion, who will doubtleſs by 'her education and many accompliſh-'ments, be of great ſervice to you.'

Miſs

MISS HAMMOND chearfully accepted of this new friend, and did all in her power to leſſen the load of grief that weighed her down almoſt to the grave; for tho' it might perhaps, be improper to ſay ſhe was in love with the deceaſed captain at her time of life, as ſhe was turned of forty; yet ſhe certainly had a very great eſteem for him, mixed with a tender gratitude, that very nearly came up to the warmth of paſſion: add to this the diſappointment of all her hopes in regard to fortune, within a moment of eaſe and independance, but now beholden to ſtrangers for ſupport. However ſhe, as much as poſſible, ſuppreſſed her ſorrow, which ſhe confined to her own breaſt, as ſhe thought ſhe had no right to diſturb the tranquillity of a family that had ſo kindly afforded her protection; ſhe even endeavoured to be uſeful, and at length obtained ſuch an eaſy reſignation to providence, that ſhe could think on her paſt and preſent ſtate without repining: her benefactor's daughter reaped very great advantages from her unhappy circumſtances, as ſhe was a woman of true good ſenſe, and had ſpent the greateſt part of her life in a genteel retirement, that had given her much leiſure to improve her mind; ſhe underſtood French, was well

well ſkilled in muſick, and could point out the particular beauties of the Engliſh claſſicks: and, in ſhort, poſſeſſed every qualification that could render her an agreeable companion, together with the leſs ſhining, tho' not leſs uſeful requiſites of her ſex.

She had been ſome years the ſole manager of her father's family, a truſt which not all her love of books had made her neglect; for it was her common ſaying, that the motive dignifies the action, and that no office performed for the eaſe or delight of thoſe dear to us, ought to be thought mean. If ſome ladies were of her way of thinking, I am perſuaded we ſhould ſee more conſtant huſbands, and fewer diſobedient children; but if the poor man is left to take care of his own content as he may, and the younger part of the family are truſted to the conduct of mercenary ſervants, while the wife or mother is ſolely engroſſed by good company and cards, it can never be thought ſurpriſing, that pretty Miſtreſs Mincing ſhould have charms for her maſter, or that Miſs Biddy his daughter, ſhould be taken with the complaiſance of papa's ſprightly valet.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XVII.

Miſs Hammond reaps great advantages from her father's hoſpitality to Miſs Aſhworth, who becomes her moſt intimate friend; is under ſome embarraſſment concerning her old acquaintance Katherine, but conſults Mr. Marſhall, and acts by his direction.

FROM the lady mentioned in the preceding chapter, Miſs Hammond learnt ſeveral of thoſe genteel accompliſhments which are generally allowed to add greatly to the charms of beauty, and even to embelliſh a virtuous character. As ſhe had naturally a fine voice and good ear, this lady taught her to ſing, and play on the harpſichord; her father having, at their joint requeſt bought her one for this purpoſe: and the idea of rendering herſelf more amiable in the eyes of her dear Mr. Marſhall, ſoon made her an extraordinary proficient; beſides theſe, and ſeveral other accompliſhments, the placid ſerenity of this lady's temper gave Miſs Hammond a uſeful leſſon to correct the rather too great quickneſs of her own; for ſhe was naturally a good deal alive to an indignity. She had even ſuffered ſome hard

hard thoughts to harbour in her mind againſt Mrs. Marſhall, her lover's mother, for the ſteady oppoſition ſhe had hitherto made to her ſon's marriage; but on her making her friend Mrs. Aſhworth her confident, ſhe was ſoon prevailed on to acquit that lady; for as her love of truth had made her conceal none of the extenuations of what ſhe thought her ſeverity, ſhe had faithfully repreſented the invidious reports that had been ſpread of her own character, her friend perſuaded her to think that Mrs. Marſhall could not have acted otherwiſe, conſiſtantly with the care which every wiſe mother ought to have for the laſting happineſs of her child. "I agree with you, my dear," ſaid ſhe, when talking on this ſubject, "that meer "want of wealth ought not to be a rea- "ſon for reſiſting a ſtrong attachment, "when the perſon beloved is poſſeſſed of "qualifications that are really valuable; "but, on the other ſide, it can ſurely be "no excuſe for the want of thoſe qua- "lifications, and tho' Mrs. Marſhall may "very probably not believe half what "ſhe has heard, yet it is very natural for "her to imagine there has been ſome- "thing in your conduct that gave the "firſt ground to the reports to your diſ- "advantage. I think your lover's ad-

"vice

" vice is very juſt, that you ſhould be " acquainted with his mother before you " become her daughter: but yet I own " it is a very difficult taſk for a young " woman to ſeem, as it were, to aſk for " a huſband." " Oh don't talk of it," replied Miſs Hammond, " nothing ſhall " make me conſent to ſo mortifying a " ſtep: if I am to appear after mar- " riage in the ſame rank as if I had " brought Mr. Marſhall a fortune ſuit- " able to his own, why ſhould not his " affection now be ſuppoſed to have ta- " ken off ſomething of the meanneſs of " my birth? Does all the charm lie in " the magick of the prieſt's tongue? I " am ſure, if I know myſelf, were I " miſtreſs of millions, I ſhould think I " received more honour by his tender- " neſs, than could be given me by rank " or title."

ON this the door burſt open, and Mr. Marſhall entering in a tranſport, caught her in his arms with an avidity that ſurpriſed her, at the ſame time crying, " And " I am ſure, my dear, that confeſſion " has made me happier than I ſhould " have been in the acquiſition of milli- " ons." Then letting her go, he told her, ſhe muſt forgive his curioſity; for as he heard her mention his name in a tone

tone of impatience, he could not reſiſt the deſire of knowing what had offended her.

Miss Hammond, tho' ſhe bluſhed at his having over-heard what was ſpoke in confidence to her friend, was eaſily prevailed on to accept of his apology; but if there had been a proſpect of ever ſo great a difficulty in making his peace, the cauſe of his preſent viſit would ſoon have produced a reconciliation, ſince it was to know when ſhe ſhould ſee Mrs. Katherine, Joſeph the farmer's ſiſter, for whom he ſaid he had a letter, which came encloſed in one to himſelf, and was an anſwer to one he had ſent the fellow who enjoyed Joſeph's farm; it ſeemed to be wrote in a dreadful fright at Mr. Marſhall's threats of bringing to light the villainy he had engaged in, and contained a promiſe of reſtoring great part of the farmer's effects to his ſiſter, on condition of his prevailing with the young woman whom he had injured, to forgive him, and to ſign a general releaſe. This Miſs Hammond, at the inſtance of her lover, eaſily conſented to, as ſhe thought it might be uſeful to her friend, who was in no capacity to go through a tedious courſe of law, for the whole of her bro-

ther's fortune; ſhe had, by the friendſhip of Mr. Hammond, got into a reputable place, and had given over all thoughts of ſuing the farmer; but her friends, without her knowledge, had made her intereſt their own, eſpecially Mr. Marſhall, as he knew acts of beneficence were far more pleaſing to the tender heart of his miſtreſs, than the ſtrongeſt flight of flattery paid in compliments to her mind or perſon.

WHILE they were in conſultation on Mrs. Katherine's affairs, Mr. Hammond came home, and they having ſhewn him the letter, he adviſed them to be very careful how they truſted to the promiſes of a man who even in that very letter confeſſed himſelf a villain: but, ſays he, "I deſign "to go to ſee my ſiſter quickly, and then "I will call on the farmer; but I ſhould "think it beſt, as Mrs. Katherine is now "eaſy and contented, not to let her know "of this letter, till we ſee if we can "make any thing of the fellow."

THIS advice was approved both by his daughter and Mr. Marſhall, tho' Miſs Hammond ſaid with a ſmile, ſhe fancied her father had a mind himſelf to be the meſſenger of good news. As there was a little confuſion viſible in the face of the old

old man at his daughter's conjecture, Mr. Marſhall when alone with his miſtreſs, again reſumed the ſubject, when ſhe told him, ſhe had ſome ſuſpicion that her father had a diſtant thought of making her friend Katherine his wife, and that ſhe was quite at a loſs how to act; "for if," ſays ſhe, "I inform him of what I know "of her paſt life, and he ſhould afterwards marry her, I ſhall make her my "enemy, and very poſſibly my father "too by her means; and if I conceal it, "and he ſhould afterwards hear of it "from ſomebody elſe, he may think "that concealment a crime." "Why "then," ſaid Mr. Marſhall, "I think "your father has himſelf delivered you "out of your embarraſſment; for no "doubt but the farmer will, as much as "poſſible, endeavour to make it appear, "that Joſeph deſigned no great alteration in his will, and what better method can he take, than to repreſent his "ſiſter as unworthy his regard." "Ah! "but," returned the good-natured girl, "if he ſhould exaſperate my father a-"gainſt the poor woman, what will become of her? tho' I confeſs I ſhould "be glad not to have her my mother, "yet it would give me great pain to ſee

"her in diſtreſs." The generous Mr. Marſhall promiſed, if that ſhould be the conſequence of Mr. Hammond's viſit, to the farmer, he would himſelf ſhield her from want; but that he thought no conſideration would juſtify the concealment of what Miſs Hammond knew from her father, if there was no other way to hinder his marrying; for as he very juſtly obſerved, the unforgiving world ſcarce ever admit the moſt bitter repentance to efface crimes far leſs heinous then living in open proſtitution; "but, my dear," he continued, "I fancy we muſt for once act "in concert, and uſe a little art with "your father: as you ſay, he has only "ſome diſtant thought of marrying, "ſuppoſe we ſhould try to change the "object, I am perſuaded you would not "be diſpleaſed at his chuſing your new "friend Mrs. Aſhworth, to whom, I be-"lieve, you have no objection, except "you make want of fortune one." They had no time to talk farther, as the perſon juſt mentioned came into the room, but Mr. Marſhall ſaw plainly by the pleaſed looks of Miſs Hammond, that his ſcheme gave her great delight.

THAT evening the old man again talked of his journey, in which, to the mortification

tification of the young folks, he inſiſted on his daughter's accompanying him. Mr. Marſhall earneſtly begged him to defer his viſit till another ſummer, in hopes, as he ſaid, by that time, to have a right to go with him; but he inflexibly continued in his reſolution, and they ſet out in a poſt chaiſe the following week.

# THE HISTORY OF BETTY BARNES.

## BOOK VI.

### CHAP. I.

Mr. Hammond and his daughter arrive at the end of their journey, they receive a hearty welcome from his ſiſter, who gives her niece an account of her ſon's terrors, and entire reformation.

ON the arrival of Mr. Hammond and his lovely daughter at the village, the father went alone to his ſiſter's, and received the moſt hearty welcome, as being the beſt friend ſhe had on earth; but on the good woman's going to the inn to her niece, ſhe almoſt loſt the uſe of her tongue thro' terror; for her own talkative diſpoſition made her imagine it impoſſi-

impoſſible ſhe ſhould have kept her ſon's unhappy adventure from her father's knowledge: however, as the old gentleman had not given the leaſt hint of his knowing any thing of the affair, ſhe recovered herſelf, ſo as to be able to pay an aukward return to the compliments of her niece, who behaved to her with the ſame chearful eaſe ſhe would have done, had the good woman been under no obligations to her, and to eaſe the conſtraint ſhe was under, as ſoon as poſſible relieved her anxiety, by informing her, that her father had no knowledge of her having ever ſeen her before.

The poor woman now ſhewed her gratitude, by a profuſion of good wiſhes and prayers for her welfare, and told her, that to her kindneſs and compaſſion ſhe owed the happineſs of her old age; for her ſon made a very kind good huſband, and was in a way to do very well in the world; but that he had been ſadly frightened ſome time ago; for the old man who aſſiſted in robbing the coach, having been taken up for another robbery, had threatened to impeach him, to prevent which, he had been obliged to ſupply him with money to keep him in priſon: "but," added ſhe, "as he was "taken up ſoon after the laſt 'ſizes, he

" died, after being confined four months,
" without being brought to his trial:
" but thoff I was glad, for the ſake of
" my own boy, that he was gone and
" could not hurt him; yet for aw' that
" my heart ached ſadly, when my good
" man told me the week after, that, as
" ſure as death, he was no' guilty of what
" he was then charged with; for a day
" or two after he was dead, another man
" was taken up, and confeſſed the fact.
" My ſon ſays he ſhould be eaſy an he
" could find out ſome way to return the
" money he took from the man that
" drove the coach you was in; for he
" once ſaw en, and was frighted out of
" his wits." Miſs Hammond, as ſhe knew to whom it belonged, now undertook to eaſe him of this part of his care, and the poor mother took her to ſee her little family, to which was added ſince ſhe left it, another grand-child.

THE placid contentment viſible in the face of the young woman, gave the tender-hearted Betty extreme delight, and ſhe participated in an happineſs of her own creating, with a glow of ſatisfaction, that can only be imagined by a mind poſſeſſed of her ſenſibility.

CHAP.

## CHAP. II.

In which they leave their poor relations, to pay a viſit to the fellow who had been Joſeph's ſervant; and are there detained by the receipt of a welcome letter.

AFTER about a fortnight's ſtay at this village, Mr. Hammond, in compliance with the deſires of his daughter, determined to return to town, and to take the houſe which once belonged to Miſs Betſy's late friend, in his way. They accordingly ſet out, and in leſs than three days reached the village. Here they ſent for the fellow who had been Joſeph's ſervant, who conſcious of his guilt, was ſeized with terror at the ſight of her he had wronged, and influenced by his fears, was glad to come into any accommodation with her father, who he imagined to be an officer of juſtice; but on his ſaying that the whole of what he now poſſeſſed belonged to Mrs. Katherine, he replied, that he did not believe her brother deſigned to have left it her; for whatever ſhe might be now, ſhe had been a very bad woman. The old gentleman ſtickled warmly in her defence, and ap-

pealed to his daughter, as her acquaintance, "Nay, nay," cried the fellow, "an "ſhe ſays the truth, ſhe will own what I "ſay to be true: for Katherine confeſſed, "but a few months before maſter died, that "ſhe had lived in a bawdy-houſe a long "time." Mr. Hammond expreſſed much aſtoniſhment at what he heard, and again called on his daughter to vindicate her friend, if ſhe was innocent, when ſhe replied, "I wiſh, Sir, I could with juſtice ac- "quit her as to her paſt conduct; but alas, "ſhe had the unhappineſs when ſhe firſt "came to town, to fall into bad hands, "who made a prey of her innocence, and "betrayed her into the houſe of a vile "woman. This I have heard her own "with tears; but if a ſincere repentance "can waſh away guilt, I believe ſhe de- "ſerves no reproach."

THE old gentleman now ſeemed a little angry with his daughter for being ſo intimate with a woman who had once been infamous; "the malicious world," ſaid he, "will ſooner believe you are guilty "of her faults, than that ſhe herſelf has "left them. The common phraſe of "once a whore and always ſo, I'm afraid "has but too much influence on our "minds. Every other crime, if repent- "ed of, is in time forgot; but an unfor-

"tunate

" tunate woman never regains her cha-
" racter, tho' perhaps, ſhe owes her fall
" more to thoughtleſs innocence than
" real guilt. And tho', my dear," he continued, " I would have you avoid the
" tattling diſpoſition of your ſex, who
" blab all they know of their moſt inti-
" mate acquaintance, yet I would have
" you chuſe for your companions, only
" ſuch as you may own without a bluſh."

Miss Hammond was far from being diſpleaſed at her father for this reproof, as it plainly ſhewed, he was in no danger of becoming the huſband of the unfortunate Katherine; but leſt the knowledge of her infamy ſhould cool his zeal for her ſervice, ſhe told him that ſhe was under great obligations to her friendſhip, and deſired him to forget her faults, till ſhe was enabled to ſupport herſelf without his aſſiſtance, and that when ſhe was in better circumſtances, ſhe would, if he inſiſted on it, drop her acquaintance.

The old man heartily acquieſced with his daughter in her deſign of aſſiſting the poor woman, and at the next interview with the farmer, drew from him an engagement in writing, that he would give the ſiſter of his deceaſed maſter, ſeven hundred pounds, on condition of her giving him an acquittance from all further

claim to what he left, which was about double that ſum, excluſive of the farm, of which Joſeph had purchaſed a long leaſe.

As their ſole view in coming to this place was to ſettle this affair, they had no reaſon to ſtay longer than was juſt neceſſary to accompliſh it; but while they were preparing for London, Miſs Hammond received a letter from Mr. Marſhall, which informed her, that he hoped to join them in a few days after the receipt of his letter. The old man bantered his daughter on the extreme joy ſhe diſcovered at this news, and the many attempts ſhe made to conceal her pleaſure: the country was now became agreeable, notwithſtanding the advance of winter, and the fear of heavy rains was quite forgot, tho' but the day before ſhe was in mortal apprehenſions leſt the roads ſhould become impaſſible. Miſs Betſy was confounded that all her ſubterfuges to conceal the exceſs of her tenderneſs, failed; but as ſhe found it in vain to diſſemble, ſhe joined in her father's mirth, and by that means took off the edge of his jeſts.

THIS impatient lover, eager to ſee his miſtreſs, had paid his grand-father a viſit, that he might have an opportunity to return to town with Miſs Betſy Hammond

mond and her father, without giving his mother the uneaſineſs, he imagined ſhe would feel if ſhe knew in what company he was engaged. On his arrival, Miſs Hammond diſcovered, that tho' he behaved with all the tenderneſs imaginable, he had an uneaſineſs on his countenance, at which ſhe could not forbear being greatly affected, eſpecially as he hid from her the cauſe. This amiable girl kindly enquired after his health, and uſed all her art to draw from him the ſecret; but he ſtill concealed it. In compliance with his requeſt, her father deferred his journey for a week after he came to them, to give him an opportunity of receiving a letter, which he had ordered to be directed to him here: but this letter was no ſooner received than the gloom cleared up, and the whole myſtery was unfolded. But this chapter being of a tolerable length, we ſhall defer ſatisfying our reader's curioſity to the next.

CHAP.

## CHAP. III.

A mortifying diſcovery, which gives Mr. Marſhall much uneaſineſs; but it is attended with the moſt happy conſequences.

ONE of Mr. Marſhall's grand-father's ſervants lived with Mrs. Milner the captain's wife, at the ſame time with our Betty Barnes, now Miſs Betſy Hammond, and they had lived together in this place, till her daughter's betraying her infamy, had made her diſcharge her ſervants, and retire into the country. As this girl had not been long in the old gentleman's family, ſhe had never ſeen Mr. Marſhall in that houſe till this viſit; but ſhe well remembered him, as Mr. William, Betty's ſweetheart. This knowledge ſhe communicated to the reſt of the maids, from whom it ſoon ran through the family, with the addition of ſeveral circumſtances which had no foundation in fact, particularly that he had left the young woman, and that after ſhe had neither been ſeen nor heard of for ſeveral months, ſhe was now kept by an old man who paſſed for her father. As this ſtory ſeemed to the old gentleman to cor-

corroborate others that had been told him to Miſs Hammond's diſadvantage, it gained credit, and the young gentleman was treated as an inconſiderate fellow, who had made himſelf ridiculous in defence of a common ſlut. Theſe inſinuations greatly provoked Mr. Marſhall, and he had ſeveral warm conteſts with his grandfather, who, through the peeviſh obſtinacy which too frequently attends advanced years, ſeemed reſolved not to be convinced that he had received a wrong information. He even ſent an account of all he had heard to Mrs. Marſhall his daughter, with ſtrong proteſtations, that except ſhe could influence her ſon to act like a reaſonable being, he would chuſe one, whom he thought, more in his ſenſes, to inherit his fortune; for that enough of his money had gone in the extravagancies of a vile woman already. This alluded to his laſt wife, whom he had taken after the death of Mrs. Marſhall's mother, and maintained in a rank, which as it was far above what ſhe could reaſonably expect, ought at leaſt to have met returns of gratitude; but ſhe had been falſe to his bed with a mean wretch, whoſe higheſt advancement was his wearing her huſband's livery. This diſappointment, added to the common infirmi-

ties of age, ſerved to render him extreamly fretful, and even blinded his judgment, ſo far as to make him imagine that his experience ought to have as ſtrong an effect on the young heart of his grandſon, as it had on his own.

MR. MARSHALL wrote by the ſame poſt to his mother, an account of every circumſtance as it really was, and ſtrenuouſly vindicated the innocent Miſs Hammond from the ſlander of her fellow-ſervant, who perhaps exaggerated every thing ſhe had heard, from no other motive but that of envy, an ugly vice, which I am perſuaded as often gains entrance into the cot as the court, notwithſtanding all the moral writers pretend to the contrary.

THIS lady was under no ſmall perplexity at her father's threats, and her ſon's little inclination to recede from his engagement to one, who, in the moſt favourable light, muſt be looked on as very unhappy, ſince ſo many concurring events had contributed to deſtroy her reputation: but as ſhe thought a rough oppoſition would produce a quite contrary effect to what ſhe wiſhed, ſhe ſent the young man an anſwer that ſeemed rather to defer than deny, her conſent to what he thought ſo abſolutely neceſſary to his

future

future happineſs, ſince ſhe made it depend on his being able to clear his miſtreſs from this new charge; tho' it was eaſy enough to ſee, by the ſtyle of her letter, that ſhe was far from being indifferent, with reſpect to the threats of her father.

Mr. Marshall, impatient to vindicate Miſs Hammond, wrote to an old gentleman who was related to his father, for whom he knew his mother had the greateſt eſteem, and in the moſt earneſt manner begged him to make a ſtrict and impartial enquiry into the particulars of Miſs Hammond's life; to go to the houſe where her father lodged, and, if poſſible, to trace out the vile calumny, and convince his mother, how much his dear girl had been wronged; and as he found it now in vain to conceal her having once been a ſervant, he alſo deſired him to learn her true character from the lady whoſe child ſhe attended, with whom this gentleman was extreamly intimate, and to whoſe houſe he had often accompanied him, he being the ſame who the reader may remember, was with him when he excited the mirth of the company, by running after the maid into the entry.

This worthy man had often adviſed Mr. Marſhall to take the utmoſt care in the

the choice of a wife, and as his mother had made him her confident, in regard to her fears leſt her ſon ſhould by ſome raſh ſtep fruſtrate her hopes of his poſſeſſing her father's eſtate, he had uſed all the arts of perſuaſion to reconcile him to his duty; but as the young man had conſiderable obligations to him, he thought aſſuming the poſitive dictator had more the appearance of inſult than friendſhip, and therefore had choſen to influence his mind by the gentle and generous motives of tenderneſs and gratitude, rather than the ſlaviſh narrow ſpirited dictates of fear.

THIS conduct produced the moſt affectionate regard in the heart of the young gentleman, who had a far greater fear of offending this goodneſs, than of loſing all he hoped to gain by his favour.

IT was this generous behaviour, that emboldened Mr. Marſhall to beg this act of friendſhip, and at the ſame time, to accompany his entreaties to accept of this office, with a promiſe to be guided by his council if he ſhould find, on the ſtricteſt enquiry, any thing in the conduct of his dear miſtreſs, that gave the leaſt ground for the many aſperſions with which malicious people had endeavoured to blacken her character. This worthy man, tho' he, perhaps, would have been

better

better ſatisfied had his young friend placed his affection on a lady of equal, or ſuperior rank, with himſelf, did not think he was at liberty to refuſe the kind office which he ſo eagerly entreated him to perform.

On his enquiring of the perſon with whom Mr. Hammond and his daughter lodged, he received ſuch a character of the young lady, as the woman of the houſe, who was ignorant of her former ſituation, called her, that he began to fancy the lover was a much better judge of real merit than he at firſt imagined.

While he was in converſation with this perſon, Miſs Aſhworth, who ſtill remained in Mr. Hammond's apartment, paſt by the parlour where they were; the gentleman, who had been acquainted with her father, knew her immediately; her ſtory had made ſome noiſe, and many ſurmiſes and gueſſes had been ſuggeſted of her preſent ſituation and place of retirement. The air of contentment that ſat on her countenance was quite ſurpriſing; for ſome of the wiſe gueſſers had repreſented her as under the oppreſſions of the moſt ſhocking indigence, and had even gone ſo far as to affirm, that ſhe had been forced to aſk charity in the ſtreets. On his ſaying, that he knew that gentle-

woman's

woman's father, the perſon he was talking to ſent her ſervant to tell her ſhe deſired to ſpeak with her, and Miſs Aſhworth immediately appeared. At the ſight of a gentleman who had been the witneſs of her happineſs in a tender father, and whom ſhe had reaſon to believe, muſt have heard of the cruel reverſe of her fortune, ſhe burſt into tears; but ſoon recovering herſelf, ſhe ſpoke with a freedom that ſhewed ſhe had not learned the mean cringing that renders decayed gentility contemptible, and to which, I believe, is owing a great deal of the inſult caſt on poverty; for while pride is a predominant paſſion in the human breaſt, we ſhall be in no haſte to give more reſpect to others, than they themſelves ſeem to think their due.

After the ſalutations of civility were over, the miſtreſs of the houſe, addreſſing herſelf to Miſs Aſhworth, told her, that ſhe believed ſome vile wretch had traduced the character of Miſs Hammond; "but "for my life," ſhe continued, "I can- "not imagine how ſhe that behaves with "ſo much good-nature and kindneſs to "every body, can have any enemies; "for tho' I have let lodgings theſe twenty "years, and have had the beſt of people "in my houſe, I never ſaw the peer of

"her

" her for ſweetneſs and affability. You,
" Madam, I am ſure, will ſay the ſame;
" ſhe has no more pride than an infant,
" which, conſidering ſhe is very hand-
" ſome, and has made ſuch a charming
" young gentleman her lover, is very
" wonderful. For my part, I think peo-
" ple muſt ſhut themſelves up like ſo
" many nuns, if they would eſcape ſcan-
" dal in this detracting age. It is no
" longer ago than Tueſday was ſe'nnight,
" that Eſther my maid, came in with a
" long ſtory of this and that, and t'other,
" about the dear young lady's having been
" a ſervant to her acquaintance's acquain-
" tance's mother, who it ſeems is a fine
" lady; tho' the girl ſays, the poor wretch
" that ſays ſo, has hardly clothes to cover
" her nakedneſs: but it is ſuch a hubble
" bubble ſtory, I can make neither head
" nor tail of it; yet one thing I am ſure
" of, that if ſhe ever had been in ſuch
" circumſtances, I ſhould have found it
" out by her behaviour; for ſuch low
" creatures infallibly betray themſelves
" by their over-acted gentility."

Miss Aſhworth, that ſhe might be heard in her turn without interruption, ſuffered the miſtreſs of the houſe to talk herſelf out of breath; for the good old gentlewoman could as eaſily brook ſhort payment in

her rent, as admit of being foreſtalled in any thing ſhe had a mind to ſay.

BUT when ſhe was ſilent, this unhappy lady, inſpired by her gratitude and eſteem for her fair friend, grew eloquent in her praiſe, and, in ſhort, gave her ſuch a character, that the old gentleman, who knew Miſs Aſhworth to be a woman of ſenſe and judgment, entirely cleared her in his own opinion, of every fault which malice had laid to her charge. Yet, as it was his buſineſs to vindicate her to Mrs. Marſhall, he did not ſtop here, but begged leave of the miſtreſs of the houſe to ſpeak with her ſervant.

THE maid was called, when being ordered by her miſtreſs to relate to the gentleman what ſhe had heard of Miſs Hammond, ſhe anſwered, that ſhe was ſorry ſhe had ſaid any thing ſhe heard from the creature, for ſhe was ſure it was all falſe, and then continued, "I was talk-
"ing with a friend at the door, who had a
"woman who ſtood at a little diſtance wait-
"ing for her, when Miſs Hammond and
"this gentlewoman," (meaning Mrs. Aſh-
"worth) "came out of our houſe: before
"they were well out of ſight, the poor
"woman came up, and aſked me if thoſe
"ladies viſited my miſtreſs, No, ſays I,
"they lodge in our houſe. Aye, ſays
"ſhe,

" ſhe, times are much mended with the " youngeſt of 'em, ſince ſhe lived with " my mother. Lived, ſays I, as how " pray? for I could have no notion that " ſhe meant as a ſervant; I dare ſay, ſays " I, you are miſtaken;—for you muſt " know, Sir, I had heard but a bad cha- " racter of this woman's mother, and of " herſelf too, for that matter, from my " own friend.—Aye lived, I ſay, ſays ſhe, " lived as a ſervant; for I'd have you to " know, my mother is above letting " lodgings.—Now, Madam," continued the wench, turning to her miſtreſs, " as " I know many a gentlewoman as well as " you, who chuſe to live in a handſome " houſe and let part of it, rather than be " ſqueezed up in a narrow hole by them- " ſelves, I was horridly mad to hear " ſuch a beggarly ragged creature talk " in ſuch a contemptible manner of peo- " ple that let lodgings, ſo, I ſaid, ſays I, " marry come up! if one was to judge " of ſome people by the appearance of " their relations, one ſhould be apt to " think, that ſome folks had no lodgings " to let. On this, the woman called me " dirty kitchen wench, and fell abuſing " the poor young lady like a fury; ſhe " ſaid that as how when ſhe knew her, " ſhe kept company with a foot-fellow,

" tho'

" tho' ſhe now appeared ſo fine, and was
" above her betters, and a great deal
" more ſtuff that I have forgot; for I
" was in ſuch a paſſion at the creature
" for her impudence in frumping up
" ſuch a heap of lies, that I ſhut the
" door in her face, while ſhe was talk-
" ing: for tho' I am but a ſervant, I
" hate ill manners and rudeneſs in any
" body, eſpecially in poor folks."

THE gentleman learnt little more from this mannerly maid, but that the young perſon he enquired after muſt have uncommon ſweetneſs of temper, or ſhe could never have conquered the ſpirit of leveling that generally prevails among ſervants, who in common are much fonder of a calumny, that brings thoſe they ſerve to their own rank, than forward to reſent it.

PLEASED at what he had heard in this family, he went to ſee Mrs. Marſhall, who expreſſed great diſſatisfaction at her ſon's behaviour to her father; for the old gentleman took care to inform her of every expreſſion which in the leaſt deviated from that implicit reverence which he thought due to his age and experience, without bringing into the account the provocations the young gentleman had received, from the rough teſtineſs of his

own

own humour: for not contented with barely telling what was ſaid in the family, he added many opprobrious terms, and very liberally beſtowed the title of jilt and ſtrumpet on the innocent girl. And on his endeavouring to vindicate her, called him a thoughtleſs young fool, who if he ventured to marry her, after ſo many repeated cautions, deſerved to be hooted at, as a voluntary cuckold.

As Mr. Marſhall had, out of regard to his grand-father, mentioned nothing of this in his letter to his mother, ſhe took it for granted, that he had failed in that reſpect which he owed him as a parent, and fearful of the conſequences, had juſt determined to beg the aſſiſtance of her own and her ſon's friend in the affair, when he paid her this viſit.

The lady ſoon began on the ſubject that lay neareſt her heart, and blamed her ſon for his blindneſs to his own intereſt, and the little account he made of her peace; "tho' I am ſure," ſaid ſhe, "the "girl with whom he is ſo infatuated, "can never be the vile creature ſhe is re- "preſented, as he is ſo fond of her, yet "there muſt certainly be ſome ground "for theſe ſtories; ſomething or other in "her conduct, that gave the firſt riſe to "them; and I ſhould think he but ill

" repaid the tenderneſs which I have al-
" ways ſhewn him, if he runs the hazard
" of diſobliging my father, who, he
" knows, will involve me in his diſplea-
" ſure, for the trifling ſatisfaction he can
" hope to meet with in a woman of a
" coquettiſh or light diſpoſition."—" But
" ſuppoſe," returned the gentleman,
" Billy ſhould have made choice of one
" who deſerves a character the reverſe of
" this, muſt he deſtroy his own happi-
" neſs to humour your father? For my
" part, I believe ſhe is much wronged,
" and another morning ſpent as this has
" been, will make me almoſt the young
" ſpark's rival myſelf."

THIS banter from a man near ſeventy, a little removed the chagrin of the lady, who began to enquire by what means he became acquainted with a young woman who had been to her the cauſe of near ſix years uneaſineſs, when ſhe was informed, that at her ſon's deſire he had viſited the miſtreſs of the houſe where ſhe lived, it a good deal removed the prejudice ſhe had hitherto had againſt her, ſince ſhe was certain, that her ſon had too much ſenſe and gratitude to ſuffer his friend and benefactor to make himſelf ridiculous, by an enquiry concerning an infamous woman; but when he had given

given her an account of the ſucceſs of his embaſſy, and told her the many things he had heard from the grateful Miſs Aſhworth, and the chattering landlady, in favour of the deſpiſed girl, ſhe replied with vivacity, "Would to God he was "once married to her, if ſhe is in rea-"lity what theſe good people repreſent "her; but if I ſhould be known to en-"courage it, my father would never for-"give me."

The old gentleman, who was wiſe enough to eſteem happineſs beyond wealth, both for himſelf and his friend, catched at theſe words, and replied, that he believed, if that was her wiſh, he could ſoon perſuade her ſon to give her ſatisfaction; but he told her he had ſtill part of his commiſſion incompleat, and therefore deſigned that evening to pay a viſit to a friend, where he was ſure of hearing the young woman's true character, as her miſtreſs could neither be biaſſed by ſelf-intereſt nor gratitude, tho' there might poſſibly be ſomething of both to influence thoſe who had given him his information in the morning. At length it was agreed between Mrs. Marſhall and her worthy friend, that if, on the ſtricteſt examination, there was no other objection on the ſide of Miſs Hammond, but the want of

an equal fortune, he ſhould promiſe Mr. Marſhall his intereſt to reconcile his other relations to his choice, and aſſure him of the continuance of his favour and friendſhip, if his endeavours were without effect.

IN the evening this benevolent man went, as he had propoſed, to his friend's houſe, and there had every doubt removed of Miſs Hammond's virtue, and, in ſhort, received ſuch an account of her behaviour, both from that lady and the friendly Mrs. Robinſon, whom ſhe ſent for to do juſtice to the injured merit of one who had engaged her love and eſteem, that he could not forbear being charmed with her character; and therefore in his anſwer to his friend, he went a little beyond the inſtructions he had received from his mother, and even adviſed him in a merry way, to get himſelf ſhackled, that he might have nothing to fear, ſince his frequent quarrels with his grand-father, gave him very little to hope; and added, that he wiſhed Miſs Hammond, by being his wife, might take off the violent inclination he felt, in ſpite of the whiteneſs of his beard, and the gravity incident to one of his years, to become her admirer, from the amiable character her friends had given him of her uncommon

mon merit: and at the concluſion of his epiſtle wrote thus, "Take care, young "man, I don't ſee this beauty before To "have and to hold ſecures her yours; "leſt, as at my time of life, affairs of "love will admit of but little delay, I "ſhould run away with the lady, while "you are heſitating whether to be very "rich, or very happy."

## CHAP. IV.

Contains unjuſt ſuſpicions, tears, bluſhes, and reconcilement.

THE letter Mr. Marſhall received from his worthy friend, was favourable beyond his utmoſt hopes, and almoſt inſtantaneouſly diſperſed the anxious gloom that had ſat on his features during his ſuſpence: he dreaded this gentleman's diſapprobation, and had more than once repented his having put his future fate in his power, by promiſing to be ruled by his advice; but this ſanction to his love, from one who had made himſelf dear to him by repeated acts of kindneſs, added, if poſſible, double bliſs to the near proſpect of poſſeſſing his charming girl, who had borne a large ſhare in the anxiety of

her lover, tho' ſhe was unacquainted with its cauſe.

HE knew his mother had too much reſpect for the gentleman who had promiſed to become his advocate, to doubt his ſucceſs, and ſecure of being able to provide for his future family, far above contempt, even tho' his grand-father ſhould continue irreconcilable, he ſought out his miſtreſs to tell her the delightful news of his having obtained his friend's approbation of his love.

HE found her in tears, reading over a letter ſhe had received from her friend Miſs Aſhworth, which came to her by the ſame poſt which brought her lover's. She, not knowing the contents, had ſhewn it her father, and as Miſs Aſhworth had, by ſomething the old gentleman undeſignedly dropt in the courſe of his enquiry, found out that it was in compliance with Mr. Marſhall's deſire that he commenced inquiſitor, ſhe, fearful for the happineſs of her friend, adviſed her to find out the cauſe of this examination, and juſt hinted, that except it proceeded from ſome deſign of gaining his friend's conſent to his marrying her, ſhe thought it a conduct that a little claſhed with the tender confidence ſhe ſhould wiſh to find in a lover.

THIS

THIS ſuggeſtion, joined to the melancholy which had for ſome days been viſible in his whole behaviour, alarmed her fears; but her father, who had without ſaying any thing to her, ſeen the young gentleman's uneaſineſs, greatly increaſed her pain, by giving it, as his opinion, that Mr. Marſhall's relations had at laſt got the better of his paſſion, and he only waited till he could break with her, with ſome appearance of juſtice, and therefore inſiſted on her peremptorily demanding the reaſon of his ſending his ſpies after her.

THIS injunction ſhe was endeavouring to bring herſelf to obey; and in order to get rid of the tender ideas that crouded into her mind, and made her too ſoft to act the haughty beauty, ſhe was again reading over her friend's epiſtle when he entered the room, and with a look which expreſſed the moſt extatic fondneſs, ſeized one of her hands, crying at the ſame time, "My deareſt Betſy, we are at laſt "permitted to be happy." But the cold forbidding air ſhe had put on at his coming into the room, and which, loſt in rapture, he did not at firſt obſerve, now gave a damp to his ſpirits: the letter lay open before her on the table on which ſhe was leaning, and was wet with her

tears; and this, on ſeeing him look towards it, ſhe haſtily ſnatched up.

A behaviour ſo contrary to that open confidence with which he had always been treated, both by her and her father, gave him ſenſations very different from thoſe with which he was inſpired on his entrance, and as he had ſeen enough of the letter to obſerve that it was wrote in a free hand, which does not often happen when the pen is held by a fair one, he concluded, that her charms had made ſome new conqueſt, and influenced by the commands of her father, or the deſire of immediate grandeur, the tears ſhe had been ſhedding were cauſed by the laſt ſtruggle for love and him.

THIS torturing thought for a moment kept him ſilent; but on his obſerving, her features a good deal ſoftened, and her eyes gliſtening with a ſtarting tear, he with the utmoſt tenderneſs of look and voice, cryed, "And is it you, my dear, "who treats me coldly, at a time when "my fond heart was exulting in the "hopes of the moſt perfect happineſs? "At a time when I was pleaſing myſelf "with having it in my power to ſhew "the world, the high regard I feel "for my charming maid, by chuſing a "moderate fortune with the bleſſing of

"ſharing

" ſharing it with her, to the poſſeſſion of
" a large one without that happineſs?
" What have I done to merit this di-
" ſtance and reſerve?" " Nay," re-
turned Miſs Hammond, " I think I
" have moſt reaſon to complain of re-
" ſerve, ſince, tho' I only aſked to ſhare
" your uneaſineſs, you did not think me
" worthy to be truſted. You complain
" of my want of confidence; but what
" can I think of your ſending your rela-
" tion to enquire of the perſon where my
" father lodges, concerning my conduct.
" I thought, Sir, you long ſince knew,
" that however low my birth, I was above
" diſguiſe. If I know myſelf, I would
" not wiſh concealment; but to be ſuſ-
" pected by you, whom I once thought
" partial in my favour, is, I confeſs,
" more than I can bear with indiffe-
" rence. I will even own," ſhe conti-
nued bluſhing, " that I had conceived
" hopes of being able to ſooth your cares,
" but while you keep to yourſelf what
" gives you pain, I have but little pro-
" ſpect of partaking in your happineſs.
" It is not the ſharing your fortune,
" were it ever ſo immenſe, that would
" render me happy, if I thought your
" heart judged me unworthy of an un-
" reſerved confidence; and however un-

" reaſonable the ambition, no ſuperiority
" of condition in the man who called
" me his wife, could make me eaſy, if
" I did not, in his opinion, merit the
" title of his friend: and ſure, if I have
" the leaſt notion of what conſtitutes
" that character, it is inconſiſtent with
" the concealment of the cauſe of our
" diſtreſſes, or ſending others to ſuſpect
" our behaviour. You needed not, Sir,
" —indeed you need not be at the pains
" of employing your friends to help you
" to an excuſe to part with me; for your
" happineſs is too dear to me, to give
" you reaſon to dread my reproaches."

THE laſt words were rendered almoſt inarticulate, by the burſt of grief that accompanied them, which, in ſpite of all ſhe could do to hinder it, vented itſelf in a violent fit of crying. The tender lover, unable to bear the ſight of her tears, ſnatched her to his breaſt, and with a ſoftneſs that made his words near as unintelligble as her own, cried, " You are, my
" dear, you are, and ſhall for ever re-
" main, my friend; the ſoother of my
" cares, and the delight of my life. For-
" give the cruel reſtraint, which, out of
" tenderneſs to your peace, I have been
" obliged to keep. It was not from any
" ſuſpicions of my own, that I ſent to

" your

" your lodgings; for I know your mind,
" all amiable as your perſon, needs no
" diſguiſe; but you had been vilely tra-
" duced to my grand-father, with whom
" I have not credit ſufficient to be be-
" lieved before a ſervant that is but juſt
" come into his family. I thought this
" might give you ſome concern, and this
" was the reaſon of my concealing it,
" till I could at the ſame time let you
" know the calumny was confuted. I
" am happier than my hopes; your friends
" do juſtice to your merit, and the gen-
" tleman whom I begged to become my
" advocate with my mother, (who was
" offended with me from the account ſhe
" received from my grand-father,) pro-
" miſes me his protection and favour.
" Where is your father? I long to em-
" brace and call him mine, ſince when
" he gives you to my love, he will be-
" ſtow more than life.—I can— I will be
" happy: no diſappointment, while in
" the poſſeſſion of my lovely girl, ſhall
" make me otherwiſe. Away with every
" fear; if I am bleſt with your kind
" conſent, the future poſſeſſion of half
" the world, ſhall not bribe me to paſs
" another week like the laſt. Were it
" poſſible to make you this inſtant mine,

"I ſhould eſteem it the happieſt mo-
"ment of my life."

DURING this ſpeech, Miſs Hammond had diſengaged herſelf from his embrace, but he eagerly pulled her again to his boſom, and kiſſed off the tears which had a little concealed the tender joy which now ſparkled in her eyes. This action covered her with bluſhes, and ſhe once more got looſe, except one of her hands, which remained a willing priſoner between both his.

## CHAP. V.

### Which will probably be thought full as entertaining as any of the foregoing.

MR. MARSHALL and his dear Betſy, while in the poſition juſt mentioned, enjoyed a rapture too great for ſpeech, and of which, I hope, gentle reader, thou haſt no need of a deſcription from me to make thee conceive, ſince, if thou haſt not a heart capable of ſuggeſting all I could ſay, no words of mine can give thee ideas thou waſt not born for.

IT is uncertain how long they would have remained in this eloquent ſilence, if they had not been interrupted by Mr. Hammond, who with a ſmile of approbation,

bation, reached over Mr. Marſhall's chair, and ſeized his daughter's other hand, ſaying, "Very pretty! mighty pretty! this "is ſcolding, huſſey, is it? take but the "ſame method to ſhew your reſentment "when you are married, and you'll be "the happieſt man and wife in Eng-"land."

This indulgent parent had unperceived by the young folks, who were ſolely engroſſed by an attention to each other, entered the room in the inſtant when his daughter's tenderneſs choaked her voice: he had liſtened to Mr. Marſhall's reply, and too well recollected what he had himſelf felt when young, to be offended at his tranſport: he remembered how happy the ſenſibility of his dear girl's mother had made him, and could not find in his heart to diſturb them, till he grew tired of watching their looks: an employment, which however agreeable to lovers, is apt to be extremely dull to thoſe who are uninfluenced by their enthuſiaſm.

Mr. Hammond now made ſome apologies for his ſuſpicion of the young gentleman's honour, and told him, that to make him the beſt amends in his power, he gave his daughter free leave to love him as much better as ſhe could; "tho', ſays he, "I almoſt think this is but meer

" compliment; for, I believe, the young " gipſey has not kept much of her heart " to beſtow, when the parſon gives you " her hand. Nay, nay," he continued, on ſeeing the blood ſtart up in her face and neck, " what does the girl colour for? " there is no crime, that I know of, in " loving a worthy man; but, I ſuppoſe, " you muſt act coyly, becauſe it is the " faſhion. Now, let's ſee how prettily " you can bluſh when I tell you, I ex- " pect you to bring me a chopping boy " to town next Thurſday come nine " months; for poſitively I'll wait no lon- " ger to be made a grandfather. We " can get a ring and a licence at the next " market town, and I'll ride myſelf to " fetch them rather than be diſappointed " in what I have ſet my heart upon."

THE young lover now again eagerly catched hold of his miſtreſs's hand, which he had dropped at the firſt ſound of her father's voice, and cried, " What means " my dear by this ſilence? Is not all " my tenderneſs ſufficient to make you " wiſh to render me compleatly happy?" Then turning to her father, he cried, " O Sir, why need we ſtay till Thurſ- " day? Why not to-morrow?" " Nay, " for that matter," returned the old gentleman, " I fancy Betty will think that

" warn-

" warning little enough. Theſe women,
" Mr. Marſhall, muſt have their way:
" they always pretend reluctance to what
" they have moſt mind to. I remember
" my poor wife made me ſtay almoſt a
" week longer than I liked, under the
" pretence of having a new gown made,
" which I told her, I thought quite non-
" ſenſe, ſince I ſhould be glad when ſhe
" pulled it off, tho' it made her look ever
" ſo handſome."

THE continued good humour of the old man by degrees diſſipated the confuſion of his daughter, who, influenced as ſhe was by the moſt lively tenderneſs, could not think of the near approach of her happineſs, without being ſeized with apprehenſions, that made her more than commonly ſerious. She dreaded the diſapprobation of her lover's mother, whom ſhe thought of in no very amiable light. She even imagined it might poſſibly take off ſome part of Mr. Marſhall's tenderneſs, if he ſhould conſider her as the cauſe of his being confined to narrower circumſtances, than he would have been, had he never known her.

THESE painful ideas crowded into her mind, and together with the ſolemn thoughts of the ſtate into which ſhe was about to enter, being irrevocable for life

gave

gave a gravity to her features, that needed all her father's alertneſs to diſperſe; however, recovering herſelf, ſhe told her father and lover, that if they approved of it, ſhe ſhould be glad to have the awful ceremony deferred till ſhe ſhould have ſome friend of her own ſex to accompany her. "Why aye," replied her father, "that's "but reaſonable: I ſuppoſe you'd loſe half "your happineſs, if you had not ſome-"body to talk of it to. Methinks I'd "be glad to hear the converſation of a "new married woman to her friend." "I'm ſure, Sir," returned Miſs Hammond, "you ſeem inclined not to loſe "your jeſt, let who will bluſh for it. I "could wiſh you would be for a moment "ſerious, and not teize one ſo. I don't "know that I ever gave you any reaſon "to ſuſpect my being of ſuch a tattling "diſpoſition; but, I own, I ſhould be "glad not to be quite alone: one ſhall "be ſo ſtared at in a country place! If "you will not agree to let me go to "town, where I could have Miſs Aſh-"worth to keep me in countenance, ſuf-"fer me to go to my aunt's. I dare ſay, "Mr. Marſhall will not deſpiſe the po-"verty of my relations."

THIS was a little objected to by the lover, as he was told he muſt take a jour-

ney

ney of near ſeventy miles before he could be put in poſſeſſion of his lovely miſtreſs; but on her promiſing to be his in two days after ſhe came to her aunt's, he conſented.

The father now went to provide for their journey, leaving Mr. Marſhall and his dear Betſy, once more to the enjoyment of each others company. The converſation on the ſide of the gentleman was carried on with much eaſe and ſprightlineſs, but Miſs Betſy ſeemed loſt in thought; and ſhe could not help feeling ſome concern at her having a new enemy. This the apprehenſive lover complained of in the tendereſt terms, as an injury to the delights of love; "Let us not, my "dear," ſays he, "make ourſelves un-"happy, when the kind care of Provi-"dence has been ſo remarkably employ-"ed in our favour. If the mean wretch "had not belied your virtue, I ſhould "not have had the pleaſure of my uncle's "conſent, or the hopes of ſoon being re-"conciled to my mother." "But ſup-"poſe," returned Miſs Hammond, "theſe "hopes ſhould fail, how can I look on "myſelf in any other light, than as the "deſtroyer of your peace? A conſidera-"tion that I confeſs gives a damp to all "my proſpects. I can hardly form in

"my

" my mind an idea of greater miſery
" than I ſhould feel, if the diſlike of your
" relations ſhould make you grow leſs
" tender. O Sir, my heart overflows
" with gratitude, when I recollect the
" many inſtances of your affection."
" And mine with joy," returned Mr. Marſhall, " that it is in my power to
" give you ten thouſand more. My
" mother, my dear, may at firſt be a
" little diſpleaſed; but, I am very ſure,
" ſhe has too much juſtice, as well as
" tenderneſs for me, to deſire me to love
" you leſs. A vain deſire, that not all
" the powers of earth or hell united
" would be able to accompliſh, and
" which, I am ſure, will never be at-
" tempted by any, influenced by beings
" of ſuperior ſtrength. I am ſorry, my
" dear, to ſee you prejudiced againſt my
" mother, you never mention her with-
" out loſing ſomething of that agreeable
" ſweetneſs that conſtitutes my happineſs;
" yet in ſpite of this prepoſſeſſion, I
" promiſe myſelf no inconſiderable ſhare
" of delight, in beholding the warmeſt
" tenderneſs betwixt you. I flatter my-
" ſelf that my charming girl will not,
" on her ſide, diſappoint my hopes, and,
" I think, I can anſwer for my dear mo-
" ther,

" ther, who has been more to me than a " common parent."

As this was ſpoke with rather more gravity than was common for the young gentleman to aſſume, Miſs Hammond reſolved to conquer her own melancholy, leſt he ſhould ſuſpect it proceeded from a ſuſpicion of him, and replied with inexpreſſible ſweetneſs, " You need not be " afraid of me; I have only to conſider " her as the cauſe of my happineſs, by " giving you life, to make me forget " whatever concerned myſelf, before the " happy period that makes me yours. I " never knew the fond endearments of a " mother, and I ſhall be bleſſed beyond " expreſſion to find in yours that tender " relation. Yet I don't know how it is, " I have an awe on my ſpirits, whenever " I think of her; I wiſh, yet, dread to " ſee her, and though I ſhall never be " compleatly happy till ſhe condeſcends " to own and forgive me; yet I verily " believe, were I this inſtant ſure ſhe " came where I was with that deſign, I " ſhould not be able to prevail on my- " ſelf to ſee her. Whether it is, that I " have long conſidered her as the miſtreſs " of my fate, or the high character I " have heard of her wiſdom and pru- " dence gives me this timid awe, I know

" not:

" not: but ſurely, there muſt be ſome-
" thing more than fancy in this fear. My
" very ſleep is not free from it: I dreamt
" a few nights ago, while my mind was
" diſturbed with your uneaſineſs, that
" you led your mother into the room
" where I was; ſhe accoſted me in a
" manner that terrified me to the laſt de-
" gree, and I was ſo oppreſſed that I
" ſunk down before her; when inſtantly
" ſhe vaniſhed from my ſight, and I be-
" held in her room a bright being, who
" aſſumed the title of my guardian angel;
" for whom I felt the moſt extatic grati-
" tude. I waked in a tumultuous kind of
" rapture that ſeemed to partake equally
" of pleaſure and pain, and have ſince
" been weak enough to fancy my dream
" was near its accompliſhment, by your
" having complied with the views of your
" friends, and leaving me to a fate that
" would quickly make me paſt relief
" from any below the ſky."

MR. MARSHALL rallied his miſtreſs on her whimſical viſion, and told her, it was high time ſhe was married, ſince ſhe was grown old enough to be ſuperſtitious. " I
" ſhall, if I don't take care," ſaid he,
" have one of your etherial viſitants com-
" mence my rival, and I don't know
" but there may be as much danger in a
" ſtarry

" ſtarry tiara and expanded wings, as in " the ſmarteſt toupee, or the moſt en- " chanting ſword knot." He had juſt laughed away her gravity, when her father came in, and with ſerio-comic face aſked him, if he was not aſhamed to let a man of his years buſtle for him, whilſt he ſat lazily at home and did nothing. " Here," ſays he, " is a pad- " lock that coſt me eleven ſhillings. I'm " ſure, tho' I was a poor man, when I " was young I gave two and twenty " ſhillings for one for my Betty; but " I have heard, Madam there ſay, that " when being in the faſhion is attended " with no more expence than being out " of it, it is nonſenſe to be ſingular, ſo " I took the ſhopkeeper's advice; who, " by the way is a ſneering raſcal, and " wiſhed me joy of the young lady. For " my part, I did not know it was unuſual " for the girl's parents to provide the " ring, and therefore if I have committed " a blunder, you muſt forgive me. I " thought we ſhould hardly get one at " ſiſter's, and happening to have one in " my pocket, which I knew juſt fitted " my daughter, which I keep in memory " of a friend, tho' I can't wear it, I " thought it the beſt way to be provid- " ed. If you won't have it, I'll lay it

" by,

" by, and perhaps one time or other I " may play the fool, and make uſe of it " myſelf."

His daughter's cheeks glowed at the ſight of the ring; but he put an end to her bluſhes and confuſion, by giving her employment. It was now near night, and they were to ſet out early next morning for the village of her aunt. Thus while ſhe thought ſhe gained time, by prevailing with her lover and father to be contented with her promiſing her hand in two days after her arrival at her aunt's, ſhe rather haſtened the day ſhe could not think of without an awe, that made her wiſh it removed to a greater diſtance.

## CHAP. VI.

Which reaches till the morning of the day that gave Miſs Hammond a new name, and new ideas.

MR. HAMMOND and his daughter went in a chaiſe, and Mr. Marſhall rode his own horſe, which had brought him from his grandfather's, and without meeting with any thing extraordinary on the road, they got ſafe to their journey's end about noon the ſecond day after they ſet out; for as it was Saturday, the old gentle-

gentleman drove at a furious rate, ſaying, if they did not get time enough to ſend for proviſion that night, they ſhould have but a poor wedding dinner, ſince he ſhould take his daughter at her word, and make a wife of her the following Tueſday. The lover ſhewed great ſatisfaction at this unexpected anticipation of his happineſs; but the young lady ſo ſtrenuouſly inſiſted on his waiting till the day firſt appointed by her father, that he was obliged to ſubmit.

As the houſe of Mr. Hammond's nephew was at the entrance of the village, they choſe to alight there; this was very agreeable to Miſs Hammond, as ſhe intended, if her father would conſent to it, to keep the affair of her marriage from her aunt, who had given her many proofs of her utter inability to keep a ſecret, till the very day in which ſhe was to be made a wife. To this her father eaſily conſented; for the good old man needed no new information to aſſure him of the loquacity of his ſiſter, and did not find any thing unreaſonable in her deſire of not being made the talk of a whole pariſh.

It has been already mentioned, that the firſt ſight of the young woman who was now become the couſin of our heroine, had inſpired her with ſtrong ſentiments in her

her favour, and the pleaſing reflection of having in a great meaſure contributed to the happineſs of this young creature, whom ſhe now beheld the contented miſtreſs of a well furniſhed cot, gave her benevolent heart great ſatisfaction: this ſatisfaction inſpired her with confidence; but her father was a ſtranger to this motive of her good-will to his nephew's wife, and could not help expreſſing ſome aſtoniſhment at the quick progreſs of her affection; for ſhe told him of her deſigning to make her her confident, as ſhe was ſure ſhe might ſafely truſt her. To this houſe Mr. Hammond himſelf fetched his ſiſter. The good woman had now loſt all her fears of her niece's betraying her boy, as ſhe ſtill called him, and had not the preſence of the fine young gentleman, which was the title ſhe gave Mr. Marſhall, kept her in a great meaſure ſilent, in all probability, their ears would have been regaled with a tedious journal of the minute tranſactions of a village harveſt, or the jabbering aim at words of her little grandſon, an infant of twenty months old; for as this poor woman had not a head capable of retaining her ideas, and was unwilling any thing ſhould be loſt, ſhe took care to pour forth, in a volley of words, whatever gave her delight or grief.

As

As Mr. Hammond's ſiſter had in her little cottage a ſmall room which aſcended by one ſtep from that part of the building, which in the country is called the houſe, tho' it would in town bear only the denomination of the kitchen; ſhe kindly offered the uſe of it to her brother and his friend, her niece chuſing to ſtay at her ſon's. This, they accepted, the old gentleman ſaying with a ſmile, that he fancied Mr. Marſhall would be ſoon weary of lying in a cabbin with an old ſailor, and obliquely hinted, that he might make a ſhift for five nights with the company of an old man, in hopes of being made amends the ſixth.

This hint would certainly have been underſtood by the old woman, if ſhe had obſerved the complexion of the young lady, who ran haſtily into a little neat apartment deſigned for her bed-chamber, to avoid her father's raillery, and the old woman made haſte home to prepare for the reception of her brother.

The good woman of the houſe where they now were, was acquainted with the circumſtances of her gueſts, and when the old gentleman went into the town to ſee ſome of his friends, very kindly left the young couple to themſelves, who needed not either elegant furniture, or ſpacious

apartments, to render them happy: to Mr. Marſhall theſe low ſcenes were perfectly new, and no Arcadian ſwain ever felt more delight than he experienced, when the charmer of his heart ſaid in the ſofteſt voice, on his eagerly kiſſing her hand, after her couſin went out of the room, "How, Sir, ſhall I expreſs my "gratitude for your condeſcenſion and "tenderneſs? Forgive me, if words can-"not do juſtice to my throbbing heart. "An alliance with theſe poor people will "perhaps expoſe you to the ſcorn of the "world, yet you ſeem as well pleaſed as "you could be, were this cottage a ſtate-"ly edifice, and the happy maid, who "is ſoon to be honoured with your name, "could give you as much honour as ſhe "will receive by being yours." "Why, "my dear," he returned, "in my opi-"nion you will give me more. Do you "think I ſhall not feel more pleaſure in "congratulating myſelf on my own diſ-"cernment, in diſtinguiſhing your charms "in their native dreſs of innocence, than "I could poſſibly receive from the warm-"eſt ſalutations of friends, who often "wiſh us joy, when we really need con-"dolement. If honour is to be purchaſ-"ed by wealth, and has no ſeat in the "mind, I deſpiſe the phantom: ſelf-ap-

"probation

" probation is the higheſt honour, and " the higheſt happineſs of a reaſonable " being: this ſatisfaction, my deareſt " Betſey's tenderneſs will daily give me. " I never was fond of the glare of life; " this humble cottage, and the rank of " its inhabitants, would render me hap- " pier, while in the poſſeſſion of a bright- " er jewel than is to be found in courts, " than the riches of both the Indies. " Wealth appears to me in a very trifling " light, except when it is conſidered as " giving us the power to diffuſe the bleſ- " ſings of Providence around us. It is " only on that account I envy the rich, " and it is in your power amply to make " me amends for any loſs I may poſſibly " ſuffer. The happineſs, the exquiſite " happineſs of one dear object, will large- " ly recompence me for the delight I " ſhould receive, in giving it in a leſſer " degree to numbers. O, my dear!" he continued, fondly embracing her, " let " me but ſee you bleſſed, bleſſed as my " tranſported heart wiſhes you, and able " to conſider myſelf as the cauſe of this " felicity. And my imagination will have " on this ſide the grave nothing left to " wiſh for."

The tender gratitude which now ſparkled from her eyes, and hindered her from

conſidering, that ſhe was faſt locked in her lover's arms, gave ſuch an inexpreſſible ſweetneſs to her countenance, that Mr. Marſhall at that inſtant, enjoyed the rapturous ſenſations he had been deſcribing; but Miſs Betſy abaſhed, as ſoon as ſhe recollected her ſituation, broke from him with precipitation: and tho' ſhe was not angry enough to have much fierceneſs in her look, ſhe had a colour that gave her chiding accents, not a little the appearance of paſſion: probably it might be the ſight of her couſin, who puſhed the door a little open, and immediately retired from it, that had heightened her complexion, and rendered her voice leſs harmonious than it had been a few minutes before. The lover, however, ſo well profited by her remonſtrances, that he gave no new ſhock to her delicacy, but ſuffered his eyes only to inform her of the ſentiments of his heart; and, to ſay the truth, ſhe had now learnt this ſort of language to ſuch perfection, that ſhe was able to return very briliant repartees to all they ſaid to her.

IN this engaging converſation they paſſed ſome part of every day till the arrival of that which put an end to her bluſhing and chiding at little freedoms, by giving him an undoubted right to the greateſt. THIS

THIS aweful day at length came, and with it a thouſand tender ſolicitudes. The irrevocable words, Till death, which Miſs Hammond had read in her prayer-book the evening before, gave a ſolemn turn to her features, which all her lover's entreaties could not diſpel. Indeed, in ſpight of the old man's banters, he himſelf was rather ſerious than otherwiſe, and they breakfaſted with a gravity that might almoſt be called dull: the young lady not daring to lift her eyes from her tea cup, which ſhe had applied ſeveral times to her lips after it was empty, and which ſhe could ſcarce hold in her trembling hand, while the almoſt bridegroom, was either too happy, or too thoughtful to be able to eat. The company of her father would perhaps have been now welcome; but he choſe, as he did not love tea, this opportunity to acquaint his ſiſter, that ſhe muſt prepare to attend her niece to church, and was, during this ſilent ſcene, drinking a can of flip in the good woman's kitchen, a liquor he greatly preferred to any produced at the tea-table, which he, in deriſion, called ſcandal broth.

## CHAP. VII.

### The events of a wedding-day.

MR. Hammond, when he told his ſiſter that this was deſigned for Betty's wedding-day, adviſed her to rig immediately; but the poor woman's heart was too full of the future grandeur of her family to think of dreſſing, till ſhe had told her next door neighbour, of the fine young gentleman's being ſoon to be her nephew. This was done indeed under the ſeal of ſecrecy; but I don't know how it happened, the honeſt people were ſo extreamly devout, that the church door was no ſooner opened, than it contained a pretty numerous congregation, even almoſt all the females in the pariſh, with ſuch of the men whoſe daily labour had not employed them at a diſtance, before the ſecret got vent.

MR. MARSHALL and his bluſhing trembling bride, waited ſome time after they had breakfaſted for Mr. Hammond and his ſiſter: and the gentleman began to be a little impatient when they entered; the old man crying, "Why, ſure we have "miſtaken the day of the week; for I "have not ſeen a ſingle ſoul all the way "from

" from ſiſter's, but two or three little " children." His daughter was far from being diſpleaſed at this intelligence, as ſhe thought it a proof of the good people's being unacquainted with her circumſtances, and ſecure of not being ſtared at, ſhe ſet forward with her father, aunt, and dear lover, with an appearance of more courage than her ſilence at breakfaſt had promiſed.

A SHORT walk brought them to church; but the ſight of ſeveral people in the porch before ſhe entered it, made her think ſhe ſhould have more witneſſes to the ſolemnity of her engagements than ſhe deſired, and as ſhe went thro' the iſle, the buzz of approbation perfectly confounded her. However ſhe went through the awful ceremony, notwithſtanding the many eyes that gazed at her, with a ſeriouſneſs that kept her from conſidering the numbers round her, by fixing her thoughts on a being that threw them infinitely below her notice: but on her riſing from her knees, her bluſhes and diffidence returned, which Mr. Marſhall obſerving, he, with a look that tended to inſpire confidence, as it ſhewed the extreameſt ſatisfaction of heart, begged her not to leſſen his joy by any appearance of uneaſineſs. This was ſpoke in a low whiſper;

but as it was accompanied with a tender preſſure of one of her hands, it rather heightened than allayed her bluſhes.

THE honeſt country people ſeemed in no great haſte to depart, tho' the prieſt had given the accuſtomed bleſſing, and had delivered his habiliments of innocence into the hands of the ſexton's wife; and therefore the good man who had taken notice of the bride's complexion, invited the new married pair to retire with him to the parſonage-houſe; at the ſame time profeſſing himſelf greatly pleaſed at the devout deportment of the young lady.

THIS invitation they gladly accepted, and were conducted, together with Mr. Hammond and his ſiſter, by a door that opened cloſe to the doctor's houſe, from the ſight of the expecting crowd, who in loud murmurs expreſſed their diſappointment.

THE worthy clergyman, as ſoon as his gueſts were ſeated in his parlour, apoligized for the unmannered admiration of his pariſhioners; ſaying, that the poor folks were a ſet of honeſt well meaning people, who by the lowneſs of their ſtation, were kept from a poſſibility of knowing any thing of the little delicacies that muſt affect the heart of a young lady at receiving ſuch a rough tribute of praiſe: "but,"

con-

continued the doctor with a ſmile, " I " know not whether I ought now to praiſe " or blame them, ſince they have ſhewn " as much judgment by their applauſe, " as want of breeding in the expreſſion " of it."

As this gentleman's compliment had more delicacy than the " ſweet crea- " ture! handſome laſs! charming couple!" which had rebounded through the iſle, the bride felt no extraordinary uneaſineſs; and indeed, I am apt to think, that whatever court we may pay to our own humility, by attributing to that qualification our diſlike of bare-faced flattery, we ſhall generally find, upon examination, that it is more the manner, than the matter, that gives us diſguſt.

As ſoon as the good people were diſperſed, the doctor attended his gueſts to the cottage of the young countryman, where an entertainment was provided on the joyful occaſion, that much better ſuited the circumſtances of the bridegroom, than the mud walls or homely furniture of the edifice in which they feaſted. This had been the joint care of Mr. Hammond and his niece; and indeed the young woman ſhewed by her conduct on this occaſion, that ſhe was able to act in a much higher ſphere than that in which ſhe was

placed, ſince, by I know not what fatality, ladies, in what they are pleaſed to call high life, eſteem the diſpoſition of their diſhes, or rather plates, a criterion of the elegancy of their taſtes.

MR. MARSHALL and his charming bride ſpent the day in the moſt agreeable manner; for the preſence of the good clergyman kept Mr. Hammond from diverting himſelf and company, at the expence of his daughter's bluſhes, as he conſtantly put a ſtop to the firſt appearance of any inuendo or illuſion, that might give her offence.

IT was on this account that Mrs. Marſhall had begged her father to invite the doctor; for ſhe dreaded his jeſts. But however agreeably the day was ſpent, Mr. Marſhall very probably thought it a long one, ſince he was obſerved frequently to contemplate his watch, as it drew near its cloſe, and made not the leaſt objection to the worthy miniſter's panegyrick on early hours. The young lady indeed was ſo diverted by the doctor's company, that ſhe expreſſed ſome ſurprize, when ſhe was reminded by her aunt and couſin, that it was near ten o'clock; but there was no diſputing againſt ocular demonſtration, which ſhe received immediately by Mr. Marſhall's holding his watch, which was

at

at that time in his hand, full in her view. Perhaps ſhe would have ſtill invented ſome excuſe to have prolonged the time of her retiring; but as the clergyman only ſtayed the finiſhing the bowl, which now pretty plainly ſhewed its bottom, ſhe obeyed her father's commands, and withdrew with her couſin.

Mr. Marshall, after the departure of his bride, plied the glaſs pretty briſkly, and the doctor taking his leave, he followed her, notwithſtanding the importunity of his father-in-law, who, as he had already got too much liquor, wanted more, and very liberally beſtowed the title of freſh-water ſpark, and milk-ſop, on his new ſon; for no other reaſon, but his preferring the charms of an amiable young woman, to the ſwiniſh pleaſure of ſwilling. But ſince I have brought my young couple to a place where they neither wanted witneſſes of their behaviour, nor ſharers in their ſatisfaction, I think good manners obliges me to withdraw, eſpecially, as in this enquiring age, there is no want of authors who have ſuch complaiſance for the luſcious imagination of their reader, as rudely to throw back the curtains.

## CHAP. VIII.

### The guilty need no accuſer.

EARLY the next morning they were diſturbed by the muſick of the neighbouring belfry, the young fellows of the village giving them voluntarily, in return for the generoſity of the preceding day, the utmoſt exhibition of their art. This, tho' vaſtly preferable to the noiſy ſalutation they might have expected on ſuch an occaſion in town, was far from being pleaſing to Mrs. Marſhall, who was too happy to be capable of oſtentation, and would perhaps have been glad, for a few days, to have eſcaped all obſervation. Her father indeed was ſo ſick with his laſt night's debauch, that he gave her not the leaſt cauſe of complaint, tho' in compliance with the young couple's perſuaſions, he breakfaſted with them on coffee.

THIS happy company were juſt riſen from breakfaſt, when Mr. Marſhall's nephew, the maſter of the houſe, returned to the room he had juſt left, with eyes ſtaring, knees trembling, and all the ſigns of affright and terror, crying out, as he entered, "O God, I'm undone!" This exclamation was inſtantly explained to Mrs. Marſhall,

Marſhall, by the arrival of her ſpouſe's ſervant, who was himſelf too much embarraſſed in regard to his own behaviour, to take notice of the man who had ran from him into the houſe, on his enquiring for Mr. Marſhall.

This fellow had, without Mrs. Marſhall's knowledge, been ſent for by his maſter, at the time of his writing to his mother, and that gentleman not knowing that any ill conſequences could attend his coming, had left orders for him to follow them. His preſence therefore in a moment changed the delightful ſerenity they juſt before enjoyed, into the ſtrangeſt confuſion. The countryman, notwithſtanding his fright, had the preſence of mind to ſlip out of ſight, and his humane kinſwoman immediately followed him, and by her aſſurances of concealment, a little recovered him from his terror.

The wife did not ſee her huſband come in, as ſhe was employed in the yard at the time when he entered; but on her return into the houſe, ſhe ſaw the door of the little apartment which had been her gueſt's bride-chamber, ſhut with great violence, and heard her huſband ſay in a voice of entreaty, "Oh ſpare my life, "for it is in your power." Her ſurprize hindered her from ſpeaking, but ſhe gave

a violent ſcream, and dropped down ſenſeleſs.

THE noiſe of the fall alarmed Mr. Marſhall, and he haſtily ran to the door he had ſeen his wife enter, followed by the man who had been the cauſe of all this confuſion. He called aloud, and inſiſted on his new kinſman or his wife's opening the door; but this neither thought proper to do, as they heard the footſteps of more than himſelf come to it. As for the poor fellow, his guilt made him think that he was purſued by the officers of juſtice, and his fears multiplied the number to at leaſt half a dozen.

MR. MARSHALL was extreamly perplexed, and in reality it had but an odd appearance, for a young woman to ſhut herſelf up in a bed-chamber with a hale young fellow, and deny her huſband admittance; however, ſhe at laſt recollected herſelf enough to deſire her ſpouſe to ſend his ſervant to call her couſin, for her huſband was extreamly ill. The fellow hearing what ſhe ſaid, waited not for orders; but ran to the back-part of the houſe, and Mrs. Marſhall in a low whiſper, begged her ſpouſe to keep him out of ſight.

THE poor wife was now come to herſelf, and as ſhe had heard of her huſband's illneſs

illneſs, needed no call to be brought to his aſſiſtance; but with her returned the ſervant, and at laſt Mr. Marſhall having diſpatched the fellow, under pretence of ſending him to ſee after his horſe, was ſuffered to come into his wife's apartment. Here he found his kinſman as pale as aſhes, who, the moment he ſaw him, begged that he would take pity on his innocent wife and family, and not be his ruin, "all the amends in my power," ſaid the poor man, "my couſin knows, I "was willing to make before." The young gentleman's ſurprize increaſed by every word he ſpoke, and had he not been relieved by his bride's ſaying, that ſhe was ſure Mr. Marſhall would not hurt him, I know not to what length his ſuſpicions might have carried him: certain it is, that both himſelf and the affrighted wife, was greatly at a loſs to account for the young fellow's terrors. However, the lady undertook the taſk of ſatisfying her ſpouſe, while the poor man did the ſame by his aſtoniſhed wife.

Mrs. Marshall had before told her ſpouſe of the robbery; but had as much as poſſible avoided giving any particular account of the intended rape, as her delicacy made her think the leaſt rudeneſs a kind of ſully on her perſon, and ſhe now

avoided it out of tenderneſs to the affrighted fellow, as ſhe thought it might poſſibly deprive him of her huſband's favour, and make him unwilling to ſcreen him from the puniſhment due to ſuch complicated guilt.

MR. HAMMOND was, during this odd ſcene, at his ſiſter's, and Mrs. Marſhall deſired that the whole affair might be kept from his knowledge; but how to ſilence the ſuſpicion of the ſervant, a good deal perplexed her. At length it was agreed, that Mrs. Marſhall ſhould give him the ſum he had been robbed of, without taking any notice of what had paſſed, and ſend him directly to town, with ſome neceſſary orders to her friend Mrs. Aſhworth.

THE poor country-man thus relieved from his fears, expreſſed the warmeſt gratitude, while his affectionate wife had no other language than ſobs and tears, which ſhe poured forth in great profuſion over her little infants: for the honeſt creature felt as much pain from the knowledge of her huſband's guilt, as joy at his eſcape from puniſhment. All that both Mr. and Mrs. Marſhall could ſay was ineffectual to appeaſe her a conſiderable time: ſhe ſtill dreaded the ſervant would one time or other betray him; but at laſt, what the conſolation of her friends could

not

not do, was brought about by the poor delinquent himſelf's attempting to ſooth her, and by his promiſe of acting for the future with the ſtricteſt juſtice: but what greatly added to the eſteem which the new married couple had already conceived for this young woman, was her earneſt entreaties to her huſband, to reſtore to the man what had been taken from him. "I had rather," ſays ſhe, "part with all we have, than keep what "is not our own, and, I am ſure, we "can't expect any bleſſing while we en- "joy what another has a right to. I "now ſee the meaning of our ill ſucceſs "when firſt we were married, when the "money went away we knew not how:" This was at the time when the accomplice in the robbery was maintained in priſon,) "and our proſpering ſince, I be- "lieve is more owing to our being "thought of by my uncle and couſin, "than any thing elſe: for my ſhare, I "dread their leaving us. Do, for God's "ſake, Thomas, let the honeſt man have "his money. I'll ſell my houſhold goods "with all my heart, if we can't make up "the money without, and I am ſure, on "ſuch an occaſion, my couſin here won't be "diſpleaſed at my parting with the neck- "lace which her father gave my little

"Betty,

" Betty, which tho' I value more for its " being his gift, than for its being gold, " I will never let her wear till the poor " man is ſatisfied." This ſpeech gave Mrs. Marſhall a great opinion of the genuine honeſty of the woman; for ſhe had often ſeen her face glow with pleaſure, when any of the neighbours had taken notice of her little girl's finery.

THE huſband made no anſwer to his wife's requeſt; but went immediately to a place where they kept wood for fuel, and brought out the very bag of which he had robbed the ſervant, and the whole of its contents, except two guineas which had been taken out a few days before, to ſupply ſome emergency. This, he ſaid, he would try to borrow of his mother; but Mr. Marſhall inſtantly ſupplied it from his own pocket, ſaying, that a return to virtue would always be eſteemed by the truely good as meriting encouragement, nearly as much as having never deviated from it; ſince bad habits conquered, muſt be as great a proof of reſolution, as the firſt falling into them was of weakneſs. Then giving the young fellow a friendly ſhake by the hand, he bid him cheer up, for he would take care his man ſhould never give him any future diſturbance.

THE young man, on hearing a noiſe of footſteps again, made free with the bride-chamber, while the fellow received from Mr. Marſhall the concerted orders, and was diſpatched to London, his miſtreſs chuſing to defer the reſtoration of his caſh till ſhe returned to town, leſt the flutter they had been in ſhould make him ſuſpect the truth.

## CHAP. IX.

In which the new married couple receive a viſit from the good doctor, and the reader is gratified with a ſight of Mrs. Marſhall's picture at full length, drawn in the ſame piece with that of her ſpouſe.

THE fellow who had been the cauſe of this diſturbance, was no ſooner ſet out for London, than Concord, Serenity, and Joy, who had taken flight at his approach, reſumed their ſtations, and ſettled again on the countenances of Mr. Marſhall and his lovely bride. And as it was proper that the reſt of the family ſhould partake of their felicity, ſome of theſe little deities after fluttering a while over the heads of the nephew and his wife, at laſt perched on their brows too.

too. In plain Engliſh, the peace of the family was entirely reſtored, and Mr. and Mrs. Marſhall were entering into a very tender and delightful converſation, when Mr. Hammond came in, bringing a letter he had received from his old companion the grocer, where his daughter had lodged on her firſt coming to town. The good man informed his friend that there had been a ſtrict enquiry concerning himſelf and daughter, by a lady to whom he had given a particular account of all he knew concerning them. He ſaid ſhe ſeemed very much moved; but whether it was with anger or not he was not certain; ſhe even ſhed tears, and as ſhe went away, cried, "It would have been much "better for my friend's daughter, if ſhe "had made no myſtery of her birth."

MRS. MARSHALL was a good deal affected by this information, as ſhe thought it muſt be anger that had made the lady appear ſo much concerned; ſhe did not doubt but it was her mother-in-law, and her fears had repreſented her as almoſt incapable of pity. She even looked upon what ſhe ſaid at her going away, as a kind of threat, and felt ſome little indignation.

MR. HAMMOND had had the precaution to defer ſhewing his daughter this letter till

till Mr. Marſhall was abſent, and ſhe deſired him not to mention it before him, leſt, as ſhe found herſelf ruffled, ſhe might betray more bitterneſs in her temper than he would like.

THEY now began to talk of their return to town, and agreed to ſet out the Monday following. On the Saturday they had the pleaſure of a viſit from the good doctor, who told them that he had been looking over his old ſermons, and had luckily found one that had ſaved him the labour of much ſtudy; "for I take "it for granted," he continued, turning to Mrs. Marſhall, "that we ſhall have "you at church to-morrow, young lady." ſhe bluſhed and replied, ſhe thought not; for as ſhe had not propoſed to ſtay ſo long in the country, ſhe had brought no cloaths with her that were fit to appear in. "Bleſs me!" returned the doctor with a ſmile, "if I did not know Mrs. Marſhall "too well to believe her capable of ſuch "an abſurdity, I ſhould think you un-"derſtood the wedding garment in the "goſpel to mean rich ſilks or embroidery. "Fie, fie, Madam, confeſs the truth, "and ſay that you are afraid of diſturb-"ing the honeſt people's devotion. I "own, while we admire the luſtre of the "diamond, we ſeldom turn our thoughts towards

" towards its almighty maker; but I ſhall " endeavour to-morrow, however little " of the courtier I may ſeem in doing it, " to eclipſe all your charms, by turning " the thoughts of my pariſhioners on ſu- " perior beauty.

" I have, while I have been among " theſe good folks, as much as poſſible, " kept them from thinking that thoſe in " higher life make publick worſhip a " matter of indifference, from no other " reaſon but becauſe I think the power " of example ſtronger than precept; ſo I " beg you will not be a means of depriv- " ing me of part of my audience. Be- " ſides, you know, our church mentions " it as highly expedient for a new mar- " ried couple to receive the communion, " which certainly implies, that it is ex- " treamly proper to come to church at " leaſt."

MRS. MARSHALL, at length, by the perſuaſions of her ſpouſe and father, conſented once more to encounter the eyes of the honeſt villagers; but, in order as much as poſſible to avoid being put to confuſion, ſhe aroſe early, that ſhe might be ready for church as ſoon as the door was open, and perhaps this precaution was quite neceſſary, ſince on her coming into the iſle, the buſtle and inarticulate murmurs of applauſe

applauſe would almoſt have drowned the reader's voice, had he then been in his deſk, tho' the church was not half full. Indeed a perſon far leſs lovely than our bride, with the two circumſtances of having lately come from London, and being juſt married, might be the cauſe of much commotion in any country congregation in England.

In reality, elegance and neatneſs, joined to the natural charms of her perſon, made Mrs. Marſhall that day no unworthy object of attention, even in an aſſembly of much more diſcernment. She made her appearance in nothing richer than a white lawn night-gown; but the bloom on her cheeks appeared thro' the thin contexture of a fine Mechlin cap, that might have been worn with the richeſt brocade; ſhe was not a regular beauty, yet the ſweetneſs and ſenſibility of her countenance, gave the beholder ſuch a ſtrong idea of good nature and good ſenſe, that he forgot her complexion neither reſembled lillies nor alabaſter. Her forehead was rather of the loweſt; but two exactly regular arches of a bright cheſnut colour, and a pair of brilliant black eyes, amply made amends for the defect; her noſe, (which, by the way, I think quite a neceſſary feature to render

a face agreeable, tho' a celebrated author ſeems to be of a contrary opinion, and has in the perſon of his heroine, ſhewed the power of fine eyes without one) was the juſt medium between the too ſmall and too large, and had neither been diſtorted by ſnuff, or the affected turning of it up, at objects that offended her delicacy; for ſhe was of ſo unaccountable a turn of mind, that pity with her frequently ſupplied the place of diſguſt. Her mouth was ſmall, without being primmed to make it ſo, for her lips were perfectly ſmooth, and reſembled the hue of the carnation, when enlivened by the morning dew. A trite compariſon, forgive it, O reader, for I can think of nothing better, and muſt again offend, by borrowing a ſimile for her teeth from the elephant, as a Watts or a Rutter never adorned a mouth with a ſet more beautifully white and poliſhed, than thoſe ſhe received from nature; but unhappily in ſome of her infant amuſements, which my reader may remember were none of the moſt polite, ſhe had received a blow with a ball that had a little prematurely diſplaced two of them, and theſe nature had ſupplied by two that were not ſo regularly beautiful as their companions; but this eſcaped notice, as ſhe was none of thoſe gaping beauties

beauties who from hearing that a face dreſſed in ſmiles is eſteemed charming, think it neceſſary to be always on the broad grin, a cuſtom which gives the beholder a much ſtronger idea of the weakneſs of the head, than the goodneſs of the heart. Her chin was formed ſo as to render her face an agreeable oval, and kept it an equal diſtance from the meager, and what I know not how to expreſs better than by calling it the chitty-face. That part of her neck which was expoſed to view, was not of the moſt dazling whiteneſs; but if the wind, or any other accident, ruffled her handkerchief, it was plain enough to be ſeen, that the ſun had had no ſmall ſhare in her being ſometimes called the nut-brown maid. This neck was ſhaded by a profuſion of dark gloſſy hair, which hung in natural ringlets, and really ornamented what it ſeemed to cover. As in the warmeſt weather ſhe never appeared without a handkerchief, her boſom was entirely concealed, but its riſing fullneſs had an agreeable effect on a taper waiſt that was without fault, except its being rather too ſlender for the preſent faſhion, which confounds the matron with the virgin, can be called one: if this was indeed a fault, the accompliſhment of her father's wiſhes

ſoon removed it, and brought her into the mode. Her hands and arms, which fell in an eaſy manner from her ſhoulders, tho' ſhe had but little of the dancing maſter's aſſiſtance to make them do ſo, contributed very conſiderably to the general agreeableneſs of her perſon, as they were extreamly well formed, and ſhe uſed them with neither fluttering affectation, or formal ſtiffneſs. Her ſtature was of the tall middle ſize, and her motion perfectly graceful, avoiding both the diſpleaſing ſtride of the country milk-maid, and the unnatural hobblings of a modern fine lady.

THE gentleman whom ſo many united charms rendered happy, did not in the leaſt fall ſhort of his ſpouſe in the exterior graces of his perſon. His complexion would have appeared rather too fair for a man, if it had been in the power of the barber to have taken off the ſhade of a dark thick beard, which when cloſe ſhaved, gave a manly grace to the delicacy of his features. His cheeks fluſhed with rather a deeper red than thoſe of his lady, and his eyes ſeemed ſomething more animated. In ſhort, his whole perſon gave one at once an idea of delicacy, ſtrength, and ſenſibility.

His ſtature a little exceeded Mrs. Marſhall's, notwithſtanding her having the advantage of high-heeled ſhoes; for as ſhe was of the tall middle ſize, he might, with propriety enough, be ſaid to be of the loweſt order of tall men. A firm ſtep and an erect front, gave a majeſty to his form, that ſeemed to demand authority, while the ſweetneſs of his countenance inſpired confidence, as it diſplayed the benevolence of his heart. He had, even in infancy, been treated with generoſity by the worthy man to whoſe care he had been intruſted by his mother, who made his education the buſineſs of his retired hours. No ſervile puniſhments, no paſſionate threatnings, to be averted only by mean proſtrations to his preceptor, had rendered his mind callous, or his heart tyrannical; and, as he advanced in life, an unreſerved open friendſhip inſtilled into his ſoul ſentiments of honour, and a tender gratitude that had a much better effect on his future conduct, than any dread of parental authority would have had, and gave the gentleman, who loved him as his child, a much more agreeable, as well as a more rational delight, than is ever felt by the ſevere, and I was going to ſay diabolical father, who would chuſe his ſon ſhould have a greater awe of

his power as a parent, than confidence in his love, as a friend.

HE was early taught to converſe with men, and by that means, eſcaped a ſort of aukward blaſhfulneſs that throws a thick veil over the brighteſt accompliſhments, and which many are not happy enough to get rid of, till they are no longer young. He was juſt entered into his twenty-ſeventh year, as his lady was into her twenty-ſecond; but as he had lived a life of perfect ſobriety in every ſenſe, to which poſſibly his ſtrong attachment to his charming Betſy, had a good deal contributed, he had all the agreeableneſs of twenty-one, without its boyiſh follies.

## CHAP. X.

Containing a grave converſation between Mr. Marſhall and his ſpouſe, which ſuch of our readers as are fond only of narrative may ſkip over, without loſing one event.

THE happy couple had nothing now to diſturb their mutual bliſs but the fears of the gentleman's relations remaining irreconcilable. Indeed this fear worked much more ſtrongly on the mind of the young lady than on that of her ſpouſe.

ſpouſe. The unlovely idea ſhe had conceived of her mother-in-law, a good deal lowered her tranſport in the poſſeſſion of her ultimate wiſh, and gave her many thoughtful moments. Every warm expreſſion of filial tenderneſs that eſcaped the lips of Mr. Marſhall gave her pain, ſhe dreaded ſhe knew not what from her ſeverity; the viſit that lady had made the grocer, confirmed her fears, and ſhe repreſented her to herſelf, as proudly diſdaining to own her for her child, on account of the meanneſs of her birth.

THESE mortifying images employed her thoughts great part of the time that was taken up in her journey to town, while the fond huſband was revolving in his mind, the moſt engaging manner of introducing his beloved wife into the company and affection of his mother and uncle. Full of the delightful thought of ſeeing her happy in the tenderneſs of a parent, for whom he felt the warmeſt gratitude and duty, he propoſed her waiting on his uncle immediately, on their arrival in London, to beg his interpoſition with his mother; but was ſtrangely ſurprized to find her averſe to an interview: ſhe even begged him not to propoſe what gave her uneaſineſs but to think on. "I "am," ſaid ſhe, "as happy as I can hope

" to be if I am ſecure of your heart. It
" was to Mr. Marſhall I gave the pro-
" miſe of obedience, and I gave it with-
" out reluctance; but I cannot anſwer
" for my behaviour, if I am treated with
" contempt. I am afraid all my tender-
" neſs will be inſufficient to make me
" bear with moderation the inſult I may
" perhaps receive from a lady who has
" already threatened me with the effects
" of her diſpleaſure."

As this was ſpoke in a tone a little peeviſh, Mr. Marſhall replied with leſs ſweetneſs than uſual, that he thought her prejudice againſt his mother ill founded, and inconſiſtent with the good ſenſe ſhe always ſhewed herſelf miſtreſs of. " You
" are now, my dear," he continued, " to
" look on yourſelf as ſo much a part of
" me, that we can have no ſeparate in-
" tereſts. It is my duty to give my mo-
" ther every proof in my power of my
" affection. I have never acted contrary
" to her inclination in any inſtance, not
" even in this that makes my preſent hap-
" pineſs: for, I am ſure, it was nothing
" but her not knowing you, that made
" her ever appear your enemy. Then do
" not make her think you leſs worthy of
" her regard, by an ill-timed pride. It
" was not you, but the wretch they re-
" preſented,

" preſented, that ſhe diſliked: ſhew her " the dear original, and the ugly diſtor- " tions of the bungling copy will imme- " diately vaniſh." " O, Sir," ſhe repli- ed, " it was no ſcandalous report that " raiſed her anger, when ſhe told my fa- " ther's friend, that it would have been " better for us both if we had not con- " cealed the meanneſs of my condition. " I am terrified at the thought of your " loſing thro' my means, her affection, " and, forgive my fears, but I am equal- " ly terrified, when I reflect that it is " poſſible I may through her loſe yours."

As Mr. Marſhall had heard nothing of the letter which his father-in-law had received, he expreſſed ſome aſtoniſhment at her unreaſonable ſuſpicion, and ſeemed a little angry at her concealing the letter from him. He was himſelf at a loſs to account for his mother's being ſo much affected, and could not well tell how to conſtrue what ſhe ſaid at parting from the man, into any thing leſs than a threat. This made him not inſiſt on his lady's accompanying him in his firſt viſit to his worthy relation.

## CHAP. XI.

Which, to moſt readers, will be more entertaining than the former, and ſerves ſome other purpoſe beſides filling up a few pages of this delectable hiſtory.

AFTER a fatiguing journey they arrived at Mr. Hammond's lodgings, and were welcomed home by the grateful Miſs Aſhworth, with a glow of chearful friendſhip, that helped to diſſipate the gloom of their laſt converſation.

MR. MARSHALL but juſt ſtayed to dreſs and take ſome refreſhment before he went to the houſe of the gentleman who had ſo chearfully adviſed him to render himſelf happy, by an union with his lovely girl. While he was abſent, his ſpouſe was employed in examining into the perſon's behaviour, whoſe enquiries had ſo alarmed her fears, and Miſs Aſhworth was giving her an account of the whole affair, when Mr. Marſhall interrupted them, by ruſhing haſtily into the room where they were, ſaying to his wife, "My dear, "don't be ſurprized, but my mother is "coming up." He returned to the door, as ſoon as he had ſpoke, and uſhered in the lady; but, alas! her for whom this viſit

was

was deſigned, was ſunk into the arms of her friend without ſenſe or motion. It was in vain that the lady ſpoke in the moſt ſoothing accents of tenderneſs; it was ſome time before ſhe could be brought to herſelf; but judge, O reader, the exultation of her heart, the tender joy that filled her whole ſoul, when ſhe found herſelf tenderly ſupported, not by the inexorable parent that her fears had formed, nor by the celeſtial being that her active fancy had in her ſleep given her for a protector; but her dear, her much loved, her long lamented Mrs. Evans, who had on her countenance all the traces of the ſofteſt pity. Her joy now ſprang to her eyes, from which it burſt in a flood of the moſt delicious tears, which, for ſome moments, rendered her incapable of uttering a word; at laſt, "Dear Madam!" and "Dear child!" were followed by a ſtrenuous embrace, which ſhewed the ſtrongeſt mutual affection.

Mr. Marshall, who was at that inſtant an unregarded ſpectator of this intereſting ſcene, advanced toward his wife, and with a look of affection, begged her to forgive his breaking in ſo abruptly on her; but, my Dear," ſays he, "my mo-"ther inſiſted on ſeeing you immediate-"ly." O, Sir," ſhe returned, "I am no

" longer afraid to ſee her. I have it
" now in my power to wipe off every
" ſcandalous aſperſion. This lady, to
" whom I owe even the capacity of
" making you happy, will—I am ſure
" ſhe will, be my advocate with your
" mother. I knew no miſery till I loſt
" her, and I dread none, if I am bleſt in
" her protection."

THIS ſpeech, which was entirely unintelligible to Mr. Marſhall, made him in ſome fear for his lady's reaſon; but his fond parent ſoon put him out of his pain, by ſaying, " My Dear, you need no ad-
" vocate, I am that happy mother, made
" doubly ſo this inſtant, by the power of
" giving joy to them I love beſt on earth;
" for next to my dear Billy, you always
" lay neareſt my heart. How many
" times have I wiſhed, that my poor
" Betty Barnes, with all her artleſs ſweet-
" neſs, had been happy enough to have
" been known to my ſon, and to have
" engaged his tenderneſs, inſtead of the
" wretch, whom by a too haſty belief, I
" thought unworthy of his regard! I
" have ſuffered for my credulity. But,
" my dear children, let us bleſs that
" Providence, which now gives us a pro-
" ſpect of every bliſs this world can af-
" ford." " O, Madam," returned young

Mrs.

Mrs. Marſhall, "this is indeed to live. "Is the dear Mrs. Evans in reality my "mother? Sure heaven meant my hap-"pineſs, when it gave my heart ſuch a "ſtrong propenſity to love and obey "her."

During this converſation Mr. Hammond came home, and was informed, that Mr. Marſhall's mother was with his daughter, and that ſhe had fainted away at her coming. The honeſt old man was not without ſome apprehenſion of inſult, and entered the room with a frowning brow; but the ſituation he found them in, and the benevolent harmony that was viſible in all their looks, inſtantaneouſly cured his rage: he with a blunt freedom told the lady, that tho' his girl was inferior to her ſon, he could not help being vexed at hearing ſhe was ſuch a fool to be frighted; "but ſince all ſeems to be well "again," he continued, "I hope, Ma-"dam, you won't be affronted at my "telling you, my child wants nothing "but a large fortune to make her worthy "of any man." "I know it," returned Mrs. Marſhall the elder with a ſmile, "and I rejoice that my ſon had diſcern-"ment enough to diſtinguiſh her merit; "but you need not be afraid of my be-"ing affronted at the warmeſt praiſes you

" can give your daughter, ſhe is not dear-
" er to you than ſhe was to me, long be-
" fore you ſaw her." " How! how!"
replied the old man, " before I ſaw her,
" did you ſay? Why, Madam, are not you
" Mr. Marſhall's mother?" " I am, Sir,"
ſhe returned, " but I was not always in
" the ſituation I am in at preſent. I, as
" well as you, have taſted the bitterneſs
" of misfortune." " O, Sir," interrupt-
ed young Mrs. Marſhall, " you have
" heard me talk of Mrs. Evans, this,
" this is that dear woman." " Why I
" thought they ſaid, ſhe was your huſ-
" band's mother. What, amurain, do
" ye all deal in riddles?" " I won't," ſaid
the elder Mrs. Marſhall, " be called her
" huſband's mother. I am hers, if not
" by nature, I am by choice. In ſhort,
" Sir, my name is Marſhall, tho' I went
" long by that of Evans, and was the
" houſe-keeper of the good lady Ben-
" ſon, in whoſe family your daughter en-
" deared herſelf to me by her innocence
" and ſweetneſs." " Why now I begin
" to underſtand you," anſwered the old
gentleman, " ſo while the poor girl was
" terrifying herſelf to death, for fear of
" her mother-in-law, accident brought
" you together, and you prove to be her
" beſt friend." " No," ſaid Mrs. Mar-
ſhall,

ſhall, " I came by deſign; for while you " were in the country, a lady, who has " married a diſtant relation of mine, " came to pay me a viſit, and brought " with her a friend, who knew my girl " here, and gave her ſuch a character, " that I was reconciled to my ſon's choice " before I knew it was my poor Betty " Barnes: but, on recollecting what ſhe " had ſaid, I found the time and manner " of the lady's meeting her, anſwered " exactly to the account my ſon had " brought me of the poor child, and " gave me ſome glimmering of hope " that it might be her. I then, impa- " tient to be ſatisfied, went to this gentle- " woman, and had by her directing me " to a perſon where ſhe ſaid her father " once lodged, my hopes ſtill made more " probable: but as they did not arrive " to abſolute certainty, (for your friend " ſeemed a little ſhy of anſwering all my " queſtions) I choſe to defer mentioning " my thoughts to my ſon, till I ſaw " his wife; and, to confeſs the truth, I " was glad I did ſo; for the firſt ſight " of your daughter gave a damp to my " riſing hopes, as I could not find the " leaſt trace of my pretty prattler in her " features; but her friend, on her faint- " ing away, opened a little dreſſing-box

for

" for a ſmelling-bottle, and I beheld the " very letter, that I myſelf adviſed her " to keep as a proof of the legality of " her birth."

MR. HAMMOND gave Mrs. Marſhall many hearty thanks for her care of his daughter's education, and her preſent goodneſs in forgiving her; and this worthy lady felt the rapturous delight of beſtowing happineſs all around her: She now met with the reward of her care and tenderneſs to the poor orphan, as every virtuous principle ſhe had inſtilled into her infant mind was an additional bleſſing to her beloved ſon.

## CHAP. XII.

### A reflection on ſettlements. A very ſhort chapter.

WHILE the happy couple felt the ſweeteſt ſenſations of gratitude to this beſt of mothers, the worthy man to whoſe advice they owed their union, and who was no other than the beneficent Mr. Gibbons, came to ſhare their tranſport, and with the utmoſt kindneſs ſaluted the bride, who no ſooner heard his name, then ſhe recollected it was that of Mrs. Evans's friend, which if ſhe had remembered

bered on her firſt coming to town, it would have probably ſaved her many uneaſy moments: but happineſs never comes too late to be acceptable. This gentleman ſhewed his tenderneſs to Mr. Marſhall by more than words; for on Mr. Hammond's mentioning the inequality of his daughter's fortune to that of her huſband, as a motive that ought to excite in her a more than common return of affection, Mr. Gibbons replied, "I make no "doubt but my young couſin has ſome "little pain mixed with her gratitude, "and could wiſh ſhe had it as much in "her power to ſhew the diſintereſtedneſs "of her love as her ſpouſe has his. "Now as I know no ſatisfaction like that "of contributing to the delight of thoſe "dear to me, I ſhall, tho' a little too "late, make your daughter a fortune "equal to Billy's, if his teſty grand-"father ſhould not forgive him, and leave "him his, which, I much fear will be "the caſe; but I ſhall," he continued with a ſmile, "inſiſt that there ſhall be "no ſuch article as pin-money in the "ſettlement, ſince I myſelf will have the "pleaſure of finding the lady in pins, and "have for that purpoſe brought with me "a writing that entitles her to fifty "pounds a quarter, and expect to be

" followed hither by my lawyer to finiſh " the affair."

IT is hard to ſay, who was moſt obliged in this happy company, the fond mother, who ſaw and enjoyed her ſon's delight; the pleaſed father, who felt his daughter's ſatisfaction; the indulgent huſband, who ſhared in the bliſs of his wife; or the grateful, the tender wife, who knew no pleaſure but what promoted her huſband's happineſs. I am apt to think the young lady had the higheſt ſenſe of the favour, ſince tho' all beſides could return thanks to the worthy merchant for this freſh inſtance of his goodneſs, ſhe remained ſilent and confuſed, covered with bluſhes, and ready to ſhed tears: however, when ſhe had a little recovered her ſpirits, ſhe made her acknowledgements to the gentleman in terms that ſhewed her gratitude; but abſolutely refuſed any ſettlement, ſaying, that as all her hopes in this world depended on Mr. Marſhall's affection, ſhe would not give herſelf leave to think but for a moment, that it was poſſible he ſhould ceaſe to love her; " and what other reaſon," ſhe continued, " can be given for wiſhing a ſeparate " proviſion? Believe me, Sir, I ſhould " have no reliſh for affluence, if I did " not ſhare it with my huſband, and by

" his

" his free conſent. In my opinion, the " laws of the land have very little to do " with thoſe whom the laws of love have " bound to conſider their intereſt as uni- " ted too cloſely to be ſeparated by bonds " and parchments."

Mr. Gibbons was far from diſapproving her way of reaſoning, but Mr. Marſhall embraced her in a perfect tranſport, while joy beamed from her eyes at this teſtimony of his approbation.

## CHAP. XIII.

A ſhort account of old Mr. Evans's ſhrew of a wife, and his reconciliation to his daughter, ſoon after the death of her huſband: which was kept from the reader leſt it ſhould too much open the plot before the laſt act.

THE generous merchant propoſed to the new married pair to accept of his country-houſe for their uſual reſidence, at leaſt till they could fix on one proper for their reception; for as the expectation of being heir to old Mr. Evans, had made Mr. Marſhall entirely quit trade, he, when in London, was with his mother, who, ſince Mr. Gibbons had retired into the country, lived in a ſmall houſe belong-

longing to her father; this they readily agreed to, as young Mrs. Marſhall's father had the ſame invitation.

HERE Mr. Gibbons, always ſtudious to oblige his friends, thought of a ſcheme that he believed might anſwer his hopes of reconciling Mr. Marſhall's grand-father, and of making this amiable couple entirely bleſt.

THE old gentleman really loved his grandſon, but the unhappy effect his diſappointments in life had on his temper, which was rendered as uneaſy to himſelf as to all about him, made him anxious for his happineſs; and as his own infelicity was the conſequence of his marrying much beneath his rank, it is hardly to be wondered at, that he ſhould be offended at the young gentleman; eſpecially when we conſider in what light his now granddaughter had been repreſented.

MY readers muſt remember, that when I gave them a ſketch of Mrs. Evans's life, I mentioned her father's folly in marrying his own ſervant: this baſe, this unworthy woman forgetting decency, behaved with the moſt haughty inſolence, and her huſband, tho' hard-hearted and obdurate to his daughter, humoured her in all her extravagance; but this indulgence, far from exciting in her low mind returns of gratitude

gratitude and tenderneſs, made her look on him with contempt, and behave to him as if himſelf and fortune were to be ſolely at her diſpoſal. He bore her outrageous temper for many years without any publick complaint; but his concealed griefs anticipated the hand of time, and brought on him the infirmities of age, before he would probably have felt them, if he had been in an eaſier ſituation. His extreme fretfulneſs was owing to this ſource, and his wife encreaſed his pain, by continually making a merit of bearing this conſequence of the evils, of which ſhe was the cauſe. Her virtue too, as there was a great diſproportion in their years, never failed to be the ſubject of much ſelf-applauſe; but happily, her being caught in the arms of one of the footmen, a circumſtance which I think I have mentioned before, ſilenced her on this head, and cured her doating huſband of his infatuation. The fellow was her countryman, and when ſhe was a girl, had been her ſweetheart: he confeſſed that ſhe had ſent for him up to town ſoon after her marriage with her maſter; and that they had lived in a criminal intimacy ever ſince.

The impetuoſity of the old gentleman's temper, inclined him at firſt to puniſh the villain who had diſhonoured his bed; but

a little reflection made him reſolve not to expoſe his own weakneſs by a publick reſentment; he therefore only inſiſted on his diſloyal wife's immediate removal from his houſe, with her paramour; and on condition of his never ſeeing her face again, allowed her a maintenance ſufficient to ſupport her, far beyond the ſtation ſhe was born in.

IT was now that he began to think of his forgotten daughter, Mrs. Marſhall; he had no other child; for her ſiſter had been long dead, after having been married to a man of fortune, by whom ſhe had ſeveral children, leaving behind her two daughters, of whom the old gentleman was extremely fond, one of whom was married, the other lived at this time with her grand-father. It was not till theſe young ladies were grown up, that Mr. Evans diſcovered the infidelity of his wife. He had indeed received ſome information of his daughter's circumſtances, even while ſhe was with Mr. Gibbons; but his cunning wife had made what ſhould have forced him to give her relief, the reaſon of his reſolution never to afford it her; as ſhe repreſented a ſtep that neceſſity obliged this poor lady to take, as a diſhonour to herſelf and family. During the
ears Mrs. Marſhall lived with the lady
Benſon,

Benſon, ſhe was ſcarcely thought of, and it was not till after the death of her huſband, (which was about the time of her father's turning out of his family her cruel mother-in-law) that ſhe was received into favour. Accident gave Mr. Evans a ſight of his grand-ſon, and as his likeneſs to his mother made a ſtrong impreſſion on the heart of the old man, he enquired after his daughter, and found her at Mr. Gibbons's, who acknowledged her as his niece, and ſo effectually pleaded her cauſe with her father, that it produced a perfect reconcilement.

## CHAP. XIV.

Mrs. Marſhall pays a viſit to old Mr. Evans, her ſpouſe's grand-father, and is received with great complacency under a borrowed character.

MRS. MARSHALL felt too much ſatisfaction in her father's favour to be eaſy under the apprehenſion of her ſon's loſing it; but the manner in which the old gentleman had treated him juſt before his marriage, made her believe it now impoſſible to appeaſe him: ſhe had frequent converſations with Mr. Gibbons on this ſubject, and in one of theſe he mentioned

mentioned a contrivance for removing her father's prejudices againſt her ſon's ſpouſe, by introducing her to him as his relation, truſting to her own merit to cure his diſlike. They had ſome difficulty to perſuade the young folks to a ſeparation; but they at length prevailed, and young Mrs. Marſhall ſet out for the ſeat of her huſband's grand-father, to whom ſhe was to appear as unmarried, and niece to the gentleman who attended her.

THEY found the old gentleman ill of the gout; but not ſo bad as to be incapable of converſation: he received them civilly, but could not long forbear inveighing bitterly againſt Mr. Marſhall, and blaming Mr. Gibbons for his too great lenity to him when a boy. Mr. Gibbons pleaded for his nephew, but in vain; Mr. Evans proteſted he would never forgive his marrying a beggarly ſlut againſt his expreſs command.

THIS coarſe epithet almoſt tempted the lady whom it concerned to a reply; however, as lady Townly ſays by ſwearing, ſhe gulped down a tart anſwer, and remained ſilent. Mr. Gibbons obſerved his niece's reſentment riſe on her cheeks, and made haſte to change the converſation: he preſented her to the old gentleman, ſaying, that he hoped he would forgive

his freedom in bringing a ſtranger to his houſe; "but my niece," he continued, "is lately come to live with me in the "country, and I ſhould be very glad of "her making an acquaintance with your "grand-daughter." Mr. Evans reply'd, "The lady could never come at a more "acceptable time; for poor Jenny is eat up "with the vapours, and has loſt all her "ſprightlineſs. Another bleſt effect of "Will's wiſe choice!" Then gazing at Mrs. Marſhall, he cried, "If this fair "lady is your relation, I ſuppoſe ſhe "knew him, where was the fellow's "eyes?"

Mr. Gibbons highly pleaſed that Mrs. Marſhall ſeemed in a fair way to gain the old man's good opinion, replied, "Why "had Betty hit Billy's taſte, there would "have been the ſame objection to her, as "there is to the girl he has made his "wife, ſince ſhe has but a trifle of for-"tune." "Fortune," returned Mr. Evans peeviſhly, "is not all ſhe wants. "What education can a creature have, "who has from the time of her being "able to do any thing been a ſervant? "I know Mr. Gibbons, I know by woe-"ful experience, what it is to be plagued "with one of theſe low wretches: if they "once get into a higher ſtation than that

"they

" they were born in, nothing can ſet " bounds to their inſolence; but I'll take " care as much as is in my power, to " keep the creature humble. Other peo- " ple muſt do as they pleaſe." The merchant ſaid, that he hoped time and a little reflection would convince him that it was quite wrong to be ſo warm, and added, " I wiſh you would but ſee Billy " and his wife; for ſhe is really far " above what might be expected from her " former ſituation, and ſeems to have been " bleſſed with a very good education."

THE converſation was now broke off by the entrance of Miſs Jenny, to whom Mr. Gibbons preſented Mrs. Marſhall. The two ladies ſoon grew intimate, and retiring together into another apartment, left the gentlemen.

THEY were no ſooner gone, than Mr. Evans began again to abuſe his grandſon for his blindneſs to the beauties of the amiable young lady, as he called Mrs. Marſhall, ſaying, as Mr. Gibbons was ſo fond of him, he ſuppoſed he might have made them all happy by marrying ſo fine a creature. Mr. Gibbons returned a compliment to the old gentleman for his good opinion of his relation, which, he ſaid, was doubly pleaſing to him, as it gave him hopes of his forgiving his nephew; " for,"

"for," he continued, "every qualifica-
"tion this girl poſſeſſes, is at leaſt, in an
"equal degree to be found in Billy's wife."
"Impoſſible, Mr. Gibbons; impoſſible:
"it is your partiality makes you think
"ſo," replied the peeviſh Mr. Evans, with warmth: "If it was ſo, the boy
"would have ſome excuſe; but Jenny
"tells me, the girl that knows her, ſays
"ſhe is a perfect dowdy; beſides, where
"ſhould one, in her ſituation, get that
"eaſy dignity of behaviour, that diſtin-
"guiſhes the woman of education from
"her ſervile attendants." "Well," ſaid Mr. Gibbons, with a ſmile, "it would
"appear but an odd conteſt on both ſides,
"for men of our years to wrangle about
"handſome women; ſo we will, if you
"pleaſe, for the preſent, let them alone
"to younger fellows, and change the
"converſation." I ſhall now leave them to follow Mrs. Marſhall and her new companion, who were in cloſe confabulation in the garden.

Miss Jenny aſked Mrs. Marſhall many queſtions relating to herſelf, which greatly embarraſſed her to anſwer conſiſtently with modeſty or ſelf-love; for when the young lady ſaid, with a viſible uneaſineſs in her countenance, that ſhe was ſurprized at her couſin's ſtupidity, in marrying ſo mean a

wretch, and told her ſhe longed to hear what ſort a creature it was, from ſomebody that knew her, ſhe was quite at a loſs, what to ſay: ſhe recollected what old Mr. Evans had ſaid, and looked on Miſs Jenny in no very favourable light; however, ſhe replied, ſhe thought the young woman was well enough. "Why," returned Miſs Jenny, "my couſin cries her up for "a perfect beauty; is ſhe a fair or a "brown woman?" "Neither," replied Mrs. Marſhall, "ſhe is much of my com-"plexion; but what ſignifies to us what "ſort of a perſon ſhe has; you know "fancy ſurpaſſes beauty, and if your cou-"ſin likes her, it is enough for him." "And for me too," anſwered the young lady, ſighing and caſting down her eyes; "O, miſs, you may tell my couſin from "me, that whatever part of my grand-"father's fortune falls to my ſhare at his "death, will, at mine, become his."

MRS. MARSHALL, tho' naturally grateful, at this inſtant, felt ſenſations of a very different kind: The languor of the lady's countenance, her curioſity, and her mentioning her huſband as her heir, betrayed a ſecret that no wife is fit to be entruſted with. In ſhort, this poor lady loved her couſin, and had done ſo ſeveral years; but, believing what had been told her by her

her ſervant, the maid that had ſeen Mr. Marſhall when he wore a livery, who, to ingratiate herſelf with her young miſtreſs, had repreſented Betty as poſſeſſing no one good quality, ſhe began to hope he would grow weary of her rival, and ſhe ſhould have the happineſs of engaging his heart; but, alas! in the midſt of theſe hopes, the news of his marriage reached her ears. Pride and love, too violent paſſions, that can ill brook diſappointment, at once aſſailed the lady's heart, and had really a good deal imparied her health. But to return:

This diſcovery almoſt unfitted Mrs. Marſhall for the part ſhe was to act, and ſhe would gladly have ſpared herſelf the pain of being the lady's confident; but ſhe, little imagining to whom ſhe was talking, went on, "You wonder, dear "Miſs, to hear me talk at this mad rate; "but I am out of love with the world, "and don't care how ſhort my time is in "it." And what has put ſo young a lady out of love with the world? Mrs. Marſhall aſked a little fretfully; for, to ſay the truth, however well ſhe might have been pleaſed to have had a fan, a gown, or a piece of furniture, ſuit the taſtes of her acquaintance, ſhe could not think of her huſband being the object of an amiable

girl's affection, without uneaſineſs, tho' ſhe believed him entirely ignorant of the ſituation of the lady's heart.

BUT recovering her temper, ſhe added, with a ſmile, "I'm afraid, Miſs, your "couſin's marriage with this deſpicable "girl has offended more than your grand-"papa. I hope the gentleman has acted "no baſe part."

MISS JENNY returned that ſhe did not underſtand what ſhe meant; "No," ſaid Mrs. Marſhall, "then I am perſuaded Mr. "Marſhall has acted juſtly. I began to "be afraid, he had inſinuated himſelf into "a fair lady's affections by deſign, while "he was under engagements to ano-"ther; which, I aſſure you, Madam, I "think the higheſt baſeneſs." Miſs Jenny was a little confounded at finding her ſecret diſcovered, and replied with a diſcon-certed air, "No, no, I muſt acquit my "couſin of all deſign, tho'—But whither "am I wandering, I beg, Madam, what-"ever your penetration may have diſco-"vered, not to make me the jeſt of my "couſin's wife. Methinks, I could bear "any thing rather than becoming her "ſport." "Why, Miſs," returned Mrs. Marſhall, near diſcovering herſelf by her emotion, "you ſeem to have a very con-"temptible opinion of your new couſin.

"I

" I dare ſay, by what I have obſerved of " her temper, ſhe ſcorns triumphing over " the unhappineſs of any one, much more " thoſe who are related to her huſband; " but away with theſe melancholy thoughts. " Tho', I own, I think Mr. Marſhall a " very agreeable man, I hope to ſee you " happy with one whom you will think " full as agreeable." " I hardly believe " that poſſible," replied Miſs Jenny, ſighing, " Bleſs me! I don't know how it is, " but I open my heart to you without de- " ſigning to do it. Pity me, dear Miſs, " a girl, who lived with me ſome time " ago, gave me ſuch a deſcription of the " young woman my couſin Marſhall has " married, that I thought it impoſſible a " man of his ſenſe ſhould be mad enough " to marry her; and, I concluded, that ſhe " was only deſigned for a miſtreſs, and, as " ſuch, would be ſoon turned off." " And " if that had been the caſe," Mrs. Marſhall interrupted, bluſhing like ſcarlet; " would you have accepted your couſin's " hand afterwards?" " Why not?" replied Miſs Jenny, without minding her change of complexion; " does any lady of " faſhion refuſe a man ſhe likes, becauſe " he has kept a miſtreſs?" " I know but " little what ladies of faſhion do," re- " joined Mrs. Marſhall, forgetting the

part ſhe was to act; "but, I think, I know "what they ought to do." "Why, "Madam," ſaid the young lady, "would "you make that an objection?" "Cer-"tainly, I ſhould," anſwered Mrs. Mar-ſhall, "and ſuch an objection, as nothing "could make me get over." "I ſuppoſe "you did not imagine this girl to be the ſe-"ducer of the gentleman; and if, by pro-"miſes, of making her his wife, he had "ſeduced her, I ſhould think every wo-"man, of true delicacy, ſhould deteſt him "as a villain." "I don't know," re-plied Miſs Jenny, "but, in ſtrict juſtice, "it ought to be ſo; but my grand-papa "always talked of her, as of one who had "drawn away my couſin, and ſeemed to "found his hopes of his one time or other "reliſhing his propoſals, on the certainty "of his being only her gallant; but, "I fancy, Madam, we have all wronged "the young woman; for you ſeem quite "warm in her defence." "It is every "one's duty," rejoined Mrs. Marſhall, "to defend the innocent; but, I think, "I have ſaid very little in her favour, nor "do I think ſhe needs it. Your couſin, "when he married her, gave the ſtrongeſt "teſtimony that he believed her virtuous." ——"He might think ſo," returned the lady; "for theſe artful ſluts, my grand-

"papa

" papa ſays, will ſeem mighty chaſte,
" when the appearing ſo will promote their
" intereſt; tho' they bluſh at nothing
" when it is otherwiſe." " So Miſs,"
replied Mrs. Marſhall, with great heat,
and ready to burſt into tears, " you think
" your couſin weak enough to be impoſed
" on by the arts of a lewd woman, and
" are ſo cruel as to impute want of virtue
" to one you don't know, on no other
" foundation than the report of a mer-
" cenary ſervant, who, perhaps, belied
" her merely becauſe ſhe ſaw you wiſhed
" her unworthy the heart of your couſin:
" but, I can aſſure you, Madam, this de-
" ſpiſed creature ſcorns the meanneſs of
" what you lay to her charge, as much
" as if ſhe had been born your equal,
" and would not purchaſe even Mr. Mar-
" ſhall's affections, dear as ſhe holds
" them, at the expence of truth." She
could no longer reſtrain her tears. " Bleſs
" me, Miſs!" replied the aſtoniſhed Miſs
Jenny, at ſeeing her weep, " What have
" I ſaid to offend you? or—what is the
" reaſon of theſe tears? are you concerned
" in any thing relating to my couſin's
" wife." " I am, Madam," returned
Mrs. Marſhall, " that wife, and can't bear
" to hear myſelf accuſed of what I abhor,
" without indignation." " You his wife!"

anſwered Miſs Jenny, "and have I been "laying myſelf open to—If I think, I ſhall "run mad. To what end was this diſ-"guiſe? was it on purpoſe to laugh at "my folly?" "No, Miſs," returned Mrs. Marſhall, a little recovered from her paſſion, "it was, if poſſible, to remove "the unjuſt prejudices that your grandfa-"ther had entertained againſt me, which "I ſhould not yet deſpair of, if you would "be generous enough to lend me your "kind aſſiſtance."

THE young lady, pleaſed at finding herſelf addreſſed in a tone of ſupplication, where ſhe, perhaps, expected inſolence; for our firſt ideas of any one are not eaſily eraſed, replied mildly, "If my aſſiſtance "can be uſeful, you may command it, "on condition you will not betray my "folly to my couſin, or my aunt Mar-"ſhall." This Mrs. Marſhall was eaſily prevailed on to promiſe, ſaying, with an air of ſweetneſs, "The injunction is "needleſs; for why, Miſs, ſhould I en-"creaſe Mr. Marſhall's ſenſe of his own "merit, by letting him know he had "made an impreſſion on the heart of ſo "pretty a lady, when the ſacrifice he has "already made, in the hazard of his for-"tune, and the affections of his friends, "is far beyond every return in my power?"

The

The young lady, who found her ſelf-love ſoothed by the ſoftneſs of Mrs. Marſhall's behaviour, and the conſideration of the perſon for whom ſhe was ſlighted, poſſeſſing ſo many attractions, entered heartily into the ſcheme of reconciliation, and as had been preconcerted between them, when Mr. Gibbons aſked for his niece, in order to take leave, begged of him, with the utmoſt earneſtneſs, to permit her to ſtay a few days to keep her company. The old gentleman joined in this requeſt, as he obſerved his grand-daughter pleaſed with the lady; and the merchant conſented with a ſeeming reluctance.

## CHAP. XV.

### In which Mrs. Marſhall diſcovers herſelf to her grandfather.

AS Mrs. Marſhall was placed in Mr. Evans's family with the deſign of gaining on his affections, ſhe carefully watched all the turns of his temper: when he was chearful and free from pain, ſhe ſung to him, played him an air on his grand-daughter's ſpinet, read a new's-paper, or, which was a greater obligation, liſtened, without ſeeming tired, to a tedious detail of the exploits of his youth. When he

was fretful and out of humour, ſhe tried all her art to charm the evil ſpirit, by the utmoſt aſſiduity; ſhe even became in a manner his nurſe, and, in ſhort, made herſelf ſo agreeable, by her obliging eaſe and ſweetneſs, that the old gentleman, who had worn out, by his ill temper, the patience of all about him, began to look on her removing from his family as a real misfortune. She had gained ſuch an aſcendant over his mind, that he ſometimes ſuffered her to mention Mr. Marſhall without being offended, and ſhe took care, in theſe moments, to plead her own cauſe, by hinting that young Mrs. Marſhall could play, could ſing, or read, as well as ſhe could.

THE day before that appointed for her departure, when the old gentleman was chiding a ſervant for ſome fancied remiſsneſs, he turned to her, and ſaid, "When "you are gone, I ſhall be quite neglected. "I ſhall have no body to talk to, for "Jenny, I ſuppoſe, will go about moping, "as ſhe did before you came, and will "mind nothing; and theſe mercenary "wretches my ſervants have no thought "but for themſelves, and their own inte-"reſt. If my fool of a grandſon had "made a wiſe choice, I might have been "as happy as your uncle." "Why, Sir," returned Mrs. Marſhall, "I dare ſay, if

" you would ſee the perſon your grandſon
" has choſe, you would not think my uncle
" poſſeſſed any happineſs that you need to
" envy him for." What always harping
" on the ſame ſtring," replied the old gentleman, " one would ſwear that Will's
" wife had bribed you to plead for her.
" Your appearing ſo ſtaunchly the girl's
" friend, almoſt tempts me to believe,
" the fellow not quite ſo much a fool, as
" I, at firſt, thought him. But if I
" ſhould forgive him, and ſee this Betty
" of his, I ſuppoſe, tho' ſhe was born a
" beggar, ſhe would be above waiting on
" me as you have done, who are under no
" manner of obligation to me." No, Sir," returned Mrs. Marſhall, " I'll venture my
" life, ſhe will give you no cauſe of com-
" plaint, but will eſteem your acceptance of
" her ſervice as a favour." " You promiſe
" largely," replied Mr. Evans. " There is
" Jenny too has been plaguing me, and my
" daughter has this morning ſent me a letter,
" in which ſhe begs for her ſon, and extols
" his wife up to the ſkies. If you will
" promiſe to come and ſpend part of eve-
" ry ſummer with me, as long I live, I'll
" gratify you all, and you ſhall tell my
" daughter to bring this boaſted creature
" to ſee me." " O, Sir," cried Mrs. Marſhall, " muſt not her huſband come

" too? " Not till I ſee with my own eyes " if you do not all endeavour to impoſe " on me in your account of this mighty " wonder," returned the old gentleman, a little teſtily; " for my daughter is ſo " fond of her, that ſhe ſays in her letter, " if I will but ſee her, ſhe is in no fear " but her extraordinary accompliſhments " will force me to forgive Will." Mrs. Marſhall bluſhed, and replied, " Do, dear " Sir, do, let the young gentleman pre- " ſent her to you himſelf, and if you will " forgive them both, I'll not only come " and ſpend three months every ſummer " with you, but ſtay now till you are " weary of me." " Say you ſo?" he returned, " well, well, you do what you " pleaſe with me, I think. If this wench " has got your art of perſuaſion, I don't " wonder that my grandſon fell into her " ſnares, ſince you have melted the ſtiff " reſolution of ſeventy odd: but remem- " ber your promiſe."

THEY were now interrupted by a viſiter, which relieved Mrs. Marſhall from a good deal of anxiety, as ſhe dreaded diſcovering herſelf, till ſhe was a little emboldened by the preſence of her huſband, or his mother.

SHE ſent an account of what had paſſed between her and Mr. Evans to her dear Mr. Marſhall, whom ſhe impatientiy longed

to

to ſee, as ſhe had been abſent three weeks; and in this letter, ſhe gave it as her opinion that he might now venture to approach his grandfather.

In compliance with this advice, Mr. Gibbons, Mrs. Marſhall, and her ſon, came to the old gentleman's ſeat the next day. The merchant and Mrs. Marſhall the elder went up to his chamber, while the young gentleman ſtayed with his wife and Miſs Jenny. Mr. Gibbons was hardly ſeated, before Mr. Evans began, "I "ſuppoſe you are come to take away your "niece; but I am to purchaſe the favour "of her company at a high price, ſo ſhan't "eaſily part with her; and, I ſuppoſe, "you," he continued, turning to his daughter, "are come to perſuade me to "forgive your ſon; but you may ſpare "your ſpeeches, for I'll be teized no more "about him by proxy. Let me hear "what he can ſay for himſelf."

Mrs. Marshall, who knew her father's temper, was ſenſible it was in vain to wait for a more gentle invitation, as the good old gentleman was quite a ſtranger to the happy art of doubling favours by the manner of conferring them; ſhe, therefore, told her father, that her ſon waited for his permiſſion to throw himſelf at his feet, and added, "will you give me leave

"to

"to ſend for him up?" On his vouchſafing a nod of aſſent, a ſervant was diſpatched for Mr. Marſhall, who immediately appeared with his ſpouſe and couſin Jenny.

ON his coming near his grandfather's chair, he was received with a ſtern look, and a "Well, Will, I have promiſed to for-"give you, ſo muſt do it, I think; yet, "it makes me mad to think we muſt be "fools from generation to generation; "your mother's wiſe match, and my "ſtrumpet of a wife, ought to have been "a warning to you, not to have become "the third fool in the family." The young gentleman was about to reply, when the altered looks of Miſs Gibbons, as he called Mrs. Marſhall, engaged the attention of the old gentleman. "What, I "ſuppoſe," ſays he, "you repent your "bargain already, Miſs;" "No, Sir," ſhe replied, with a faltering accent; "but I "dread diſpleaſing you, by confeſſing, that "I have impoſed upon you." "Impoſed "on me, Child! how?" returned Mr. Evans, "What the girl, you promiſed ſo "largely for, won't come; nay, it is but "like the pride of ſuch creatures." "In-"deed ſhe can't, Sir," anſwered Mrs. Marſhall, advancing in great tremour near his chair, "for ſhe is already here, and

"wiſhes

" wiſhes but to pleaſe you, as well in the " perſon of this gentleman's wife, as ſhe " has happily done in an aſſumed cha- " racter. Dear, Sir," ſhe continued, on ſeeing him knit his brows, " forgive this " deceit, and let me wait on you with the " moſt duteous obſervance. I have been " wronged, much wronged; indeed, Sir, " I have; for tho' I was born a beggar, " as you once told me, I never was the " artful ſlut, the vile creature I have been " repreſented."

The old man ſat muſing ſome time, while Mrs. Marſhall was drying her eyes, for ſhe had worked herſelf up into a little paſſion by a repetition of ſeveral of the epithets ſhe had been honoured with, while ſhe was believed to be abſent. Mr. Evans, at laſt, burſting into great ſeeming rage, cried out, " but you are an artful ſlut, and " a damned artful ſlut too." " O, Sir," ſaid Mr. Marſhall, in a reſpectful, tho' reſolute manner, " I cannot bear to hear " my wife inſulted." " And who the " devil, inſults your wife?" anſwered Mr. Evans, more calmly, at ſeeing Mrs. Mar- ſhall's tears flow afreſh, as ſhe was turning from him, " I ſay, ſhe is a damned artful " ſlut, and I'll maintain it; for ſhe has " made an aſs of me, and forced me to be " pleaſed with her, whether I will or no: " tho"

" tho' I could hang myſelf for not ſeeing
" through the cheat. However, heaven
" bleſs you together, and if ſhe ſhould
" practiſe any of her artful tricks on you,
" Will, comfort yourſelf, that ſhe firſt
" made a fool of your grandfather, and
" cheated him out of a good eſtate: but
" don't imagine you ſhall have it for no-
" thing: I expect you to bear an old
" man's humours without repining, and
" live with me in the country, the greateſt
" part of the year; for I am not now ſo
" angry with the huſſey, but that I ſhould
" like her for a companion." "Dear Sir,"
anſwered Mrs. Marſhall, ſeizing one of her huſband's hands, and turning to the old gentleman, " I have now nothing to wiſh
" for; your forgiveneſs has made us quite
" happy. May I, and my dear Mr. Mar-
" ſhall, continue pleaſing to you, and
" may heaven ſpare your life many years
" to enjoy that eſtate, which was never
" once the object of my wiſhes."

THE old gentleman told her, with a ſmile, that ſhe was an inſinuating gipſy, kiſſed her with much affection, and embraced his grandſon, who gave him the moſt grateful thanks for his condeſcenſion to his wife.

MR. GIBBONS had hitherto been a ſilent ſpectator; but on Mr. Evans's ſaying, that

he

he hoped they were all pleaſed now, he replied, he thought none had leſs reaſon to be ſo than himſelf, ſince he was like to loſe his niece by the bargain; "however," he continued, "I have gained a friend; "for, I hope, Sir, you will no longer "quarrel with me for my affection to "Billy, ſince you ſeem in a fair way to be "as fond of my relation." "Ay, ay," returned Mr. Evans, "you may banter; "but what is become of my daughter, "ſhe was frighted with falſe fire, I ſuppoſe, "for ſhe left the room when I began to "call Will's wife names? go one of you, "and tell her, I want her, and don't "ſtand billing there like a pair of turtles." This was ſpoke to Mr. Marſhall and his ſpouſe; for the young gentleman had ſeized the moment Mr. Evans was ſpeaking to his uncle, to give his lady a compliment on her conduct, which he addreſſed to her lips as well as her ears, and which, if I was not afraid of offending the prude, I would tell my reader, was returned with equal ardour.

Mrs. Marshall ran bluſhing to call her mother, who no ſooner beheld her, than ſhe cried, "I ſee, my dear, you have con-"quered. I was in pain for you; but "thought it beſt to let you plead your own "cauſe without interpoſing. Beſides, when

"my

" my ſon grew warm, I was afraid of
" being witneſs to ſome expreſſion that
" might claſh with the duty he owes his
" grandfather, ſo thought it beſt to leave
" you; but come, I'll go and return my
" father thanks for his goodneſs to my
" children; for Jenny has told me all. I
" think, my dear Betty Barnes was born
" to render us all happy. Don't imagine,"
continued the good lady, on ſeeing her daughter look a little thoughtful, " that I
" remind you of your infant years with
" any deſign of giving you mortification;
" you was then extremely dear to me:
" next to my ſon's, I more ardently wiſhed
" your happineſs, than that of any other;
" I did all in my power to promote it,
" and indulgent heaven has made thoſe
" endeavours contribute to my own felicity.
" I have even ſtrong hopes, that you will
" have ſuch an aſcendant over my father,
" as to be able, by degrees, to ſoften the
" rough ferocity of his temper, and render
" him more gentle and humane to all
" about him."

The good lady now returned to her father, who, on ſeeing her enter without young Mrs. Marſhall, cried, " I'll have
" no thanks; I deſerve none; I would
" have held out longer if I could: but
" where is the girl? I ſuppoſe now her

" turn

" turn is ſerved, ſhe will be like the world, " neglect the old man." At this inſtant, young Mrs. Marſhall appeared, and, with the moſt ready officiouſneſs, aſked if ſhe could do any thing that might contribute to his eaſe or pleaſure. She was received with a ſmile of approbation, and told ſhe might now look on herſelf as miſtreſs of his houſe, as his grand-daughter had begged leave to go to town with her aunt.

THUS ſituated, Mrs. Marſhall rendered a whole family happy by the change in its maſter; for Mr. Evans, obſerving the pleaſed looks of all his attendants, who had caught ſomething of his new grand-daughter's complacency, and chearful manner of rendering him ſervice, grew leſs peeviſh, and from a humoriſt became a man of humour, laſhing his own former follies with as much ſeverity as thoſe of others, particularly that of confounding the moral character with the ſtation in life, as he had done in regard to his grand-ſon's wife, whom he treated as void of every virtue, becauſe providence had placed her in the ſame ſituation with one whoſe vices had made him unhappy.

MRS. MARSHALL the elder and Mr. Gibbons ſtayed a few days with the old gentleman, and then left him, the lady returning to London, in order to provide what

what was neceſſary for her dear Betty's making an appearance more ſuitable to the rank ſhe now held; the old gentleman having given her at her departure a bank note for that purpoſe. Mr. Gibbons, at the ſame time, went to his country houſe, where he had left Mr. Hammond, and where he ſtill inſiſted on his continuance, but the honeſt blunt ſeaman told him, that home was home if it was ever ſo homely; and tho' he had great reſpect for him, on account of his kindneſs to Betty, and might, perhaps, give him as much of his company as if they lived together, he choſe a place that he could call his own; however, before he went to London, he viſited his daughter, and was, by her, introduced to Mr. Evans, who was ſo pleaſed with him, as there was a little reſemblance in their natural diſpoſitions, both indulging a freedom of ſpeech, and deſpiſing forms, that Mr. Hammond was obliged to oppoſe a plain "I will not," to a peremptory "You "ſhall ſtay and live with me," before he could return to his lodgings in London.

THUS agreeably ſettled, I ſhall leave Mrs. Marſhall, juſt while I take a view of the circumſtances of her moſt intimate friends; but ſhall ſoon return to take my final leave, both of her and the reader.

CHAP.

## CHAP. XVI.

### The Concluſion.

MRS. ROBINSON, who, as the oldeſt acquaintance, deſerves to be mentioned firſt, continues to act with the ſame benevolence that inſpired her to aſſiſt our poor country maid when on her journey to town; and if the chearful giver may hope for the approbation of heaven, is certainly intitled to happineſs in the next world; but her friends lament her want of reſolution to abſtain from ſome irregularities that prey on her conſtitution, and give them very little hopes of long enjoying the happineſs of her ſprightly converſation in this.

MRS. KATHERINE, Joſeph the farmer's ſiſter, was, according to the agreement between Mr. Hammond and the man who enjoyed her brother's farm, to have been put in poſſeſſion of ſeven hundred pounds; but he wiſely conſidering, that ſo much money ſaved was equal to ſo much got, inſtead of bank bills, tendered her his perſon in holy wedlock. It would have been ridiculous in her to have refuſed him on account of any former indignities; for a woman, who has loſt her virtue, only renders

renders herſelf more obnoxious to cenſure, when ſhe complains of the contumelies, which are the conſequences of that loſs. He was a ſtout jolly fellow, and ſome years younger than herſelf, qualifications which the prudent Katherine did not overlook; for tho' ſhe had been a ſincere penitent, ſhe was not ſo mortified to the world as to be quite fit for a cloyſter. In ſhort, they were married, and the poor woman now enjoys a tolerable degree of happineſs, with no other mortification than ſometimes being forced to bear in patience her huſband's telling her, he might have had ſuch or ſuch a girl with ſo much money, whom he verily believed to be honeſt. The farmer undoubtedly thinks this is the way to render his wife extremely affectionate and grateful for the high honour he did her, when he took her to his bed; but the poor woman ſeems to have a very contrary opinion, and would gladly be ſpared the grating compariſon; however, this circumſtance of uneaſineſs remains a ſecret from the world, and they paſs for a mighty happy couple.

BUT the virtuous, the deſerving Miſs Aſhworth has really the happineſs ſhe merits. Mr. Gibbons, ſome years before his leaving trade, had employed, as a factor abroad, a young man, who was once clerk

to Miſs Aſhworth's father. This gentleman, when a youth, was ſenſible to the merit of the lady, and had even taken courage to addreſs her; but ſhe preferring a parent's ſatisfaction to her own, refuſed him, as ſhe knew it would be impoſſible to reconcile her father to her marrying a man of inferior fortune. Upwards of twenty years had paſſed ſince he had left her father's houſe, and in this time fortune made great alterations in both their circumſtances; the lady, as I have told my readers, entirely without proviſion, would have wanted the very means of ſubſiſtence, if providence had not raiſed her friends; while the gentleman, once her inferior, was in the actual poſſeſſion of twenty thouſand pounds.

On his return to England, whither he came to enjoy in peace the fruits of many years induſtry, he payed a viſit to Mr. Gibbons, to return him thanks for ſeveral favours he had received from him while abroad, which had greatly furthered his making a fortune. Among the many who were made the ſubject of converſation, to ſatisfy the curioſity of one who had been ſo long abſent from his native country, Miſs Aſhworth and her unhappy brother, who was, at that time, under confinement for debt, was brought on the carpet. The gentle-

gentleman ſeemed very much affected at the account he received, and greatly extolled the generoſity of Mr. Hammond; but added, "It is poſſible, Miſs Aſhworth "may have greater obligations to this "Mr. Hammond, than you know of, are "you ſure he is not her lover?" Mr. "Gibbons anſwered, "he believed not, "neither," ſaid he, "do I think Miſs "Aſhworth would accept of him; for "tho' he is an honeſt worthy man, he has "a bluntneſs in his behaviour, that muſt "render him not pleaſing to a woman of "her delicacy; and I have heard her ſay, "when a woman, merely for the ſake of "a maintenance, enters into ſo ſolemn an "engagement as marriage with a man "whom ſhe diſlikes, it is, in her eſteem, "being taken into keeping, in the worſt "ſenſe of the phraſe, tho' cuſtom makes "it attended with no public infamy." The gentleman replied, with a ſigh, "I "find no outward circumſtances can alter "her. She is ſtill the ſame I ever knew "her, and I ſhould think fortune made "me large amends for all my toils, if "that dear woman would ſuffer me to "place her in a ſtation more ſuitable to "the dignity of her ſentiments and edu-"cation; but as ſhe refuſed me when I "was without wealth, I have no reaſon to hope

" hope ſhe would now accept my ad-
" dreſſes; nor, indeed, ſhould I be happy
" if ſhe did, while I owed her conſent,
" more to her misfortunes, than her
" heart."

Mr. Gibbons was quite a ſtranger to this gentleman's ever having declared himſelf Miſs Aſhworth's lover; but was much pleaſed to hear that he ſtill retained a regard for the lady, as it gave him hopes of ſeeing her in independent circumſtances. In ſhort, he contrived, unknown to Miſs Aſhworth, to have them meet at his houſe, where the gentleman had the pleaſure of appearing agreeable to the lady without the aſſiſtance of his thouſands; for, to humour him, Mr. Gibbons concealed his wealth. On his offering to marry her, ſhe frankly told him her ſituation, and, at the ſame time, ſaid, that if providence had bleſſed her with affluence, ſhe did not know any man ſhe ſhould prefer to him to ſhare it with her, but had much rather continue in her preſent ſituation, than reduce him to a ſtate of penury. " If that only is your
" motive for refuſing me," anſwered the gentleman, " we may ſtill be happy, for
" tho' I can't place you in a very elevated
" ſtation, I have enough to render life
" comfortable in a decent retirement."
Not to keep my reader in ſuſpenſe, they

were married, when, to the ſurprize of the lady, ſhe became acquainted with his fortune, which was greatly ſuperior to her hopes, and which enables her to ſhew her gratitude to providence, and indulge the benevolence of her heart, by giving relief to the wretched, or preventing wretchedneſs by a ſeaſonable ſupply.

THERE is between this lady and Mrs. Marſhall the ſtricteſt intimacy; the latter, conſcious of her little knowledge of the world, particularly of the ſphere of life to which ſhe is raiſed, ſcarcely ever undertaking any thing of moment without firſt conſulting her or her ſpouſe's mother. This happy diffidence of herſelf has greatly promoted her improvement in every thing that can render a lady ſatisfied with herſelf, or agreeable to her acquaintance, and has ſecured her from the common failing of thoſe whom fortune has unexpectedly raiſed, I mean making their preſent importance the ſubject of every converſation. How often do we hear people, entirely in a new ſphere, talk of their knowledge of the faſhions, the proper behaviour for polite aſſemblies, and the little punctilios of dreſs, with a dogmatical aſſurance, when, perhaps, before they became the favourites of the fickle goddeſs, a broom or a duſter were oftener in their hands, than either a brocade

brocade or a ribbon. Sudden tranſitions, it muſt be owned, are apt to make the mind giddy, and great elevations affect the heart as well as the head; but ladies, who are but lately arrived to the honour of being called ſo, ſhould conſider ſuch attempts to eſtabliſh their dignity, are the very means to ſap its foundation, ſince they will certainly betray their ignorance if they converſe with their preſent equals, and if with thoſe who were lately ſo, it will be conſidered as a kind of triumph over their leſs happy lot, which they will revenge by expoſing the origin of this great ſuperiority.

But to return to Mrs. Marſhall, who is to have all my attention for the few remaining pages of this hiſtory.

The good lady her mother returned to her father's ſeat amply provided with whatever could render her charming daughter ſtill more charming. No coſt was ſpared on this occaſion to adorn her perſon, and the prudent lady added, to the value of every preſent, by the kind, the tender admonitions that accompanied it, "Theſe "trifles, my dear," ſays ſhe, "will be "rather a reproach to you, than an or-"nament, if they become too much the "ſubject of your thoughts. Dreſs is ne-"ceſſary to diſtinguiſh the ſeveral ranks

" in life, but ought not ſurely to be made " the buſineſs of a reaſonable creature." This caution young Mrs. Marſhall, perhaps, owed to her ſeeming rather too much raviſhed with the brilliancy of a fine ſolitaire; but to whatever ſhe owed it, ſhe took care to treaſure it up in her memory, and carefully avoided all expreſſions of rapture, tho' ſhe could not help her cheeks bluſhing with a deeper red than uſual while ſhe was trying on a brocade of extraordinary richneſs and beauty; but her mother reduced her to an equanimity of temper, by obſerving with a ſmile, that the peacock's feather, they had admired ſo much, glowed with a brighter dye than could be imitated by the moſt ingenious artiſt. In ſhort, the grand affair of dreſs was hardly finiſhed before it became almoſt a matter of mere indifference to the young lady, and ſhe pleaſed herſelf more when ſhe reflected ſhe had it in her power to eaſe an aching heart, than ſhe could have done by conſidering herſelf in the poſſeſſion of the fineſt headdreſs in chriſtendom.

WHEN all things were ready, that could make the young lady appear with advantage, Mrs. Marſhall propoſed paying the lady Benſon a viſit at her country houſe, and ſhe ſet out, accompanied by her ſon and daughter, for that purpoſe. Young Mrs. Marſhall

Marſhall was introduced to her ladyſhip, without her being previouſly acquainted who ſhe was; ſhe had not been long ſeated before the good lady aſked Mrs. Marſhall the elder, if ſhe did not think her daughter-in-law greatly reſembled poor Betty Barnes; and added, that her wicked nephew, who, in all probability, had been the cauſe of that innocent girl's ruin, was gone to anſwer for that and all his other crimes, and had been dead ſeveral months: "I wiſh," continued the good lady, "I had behaved "leſs harſh to the poor child, for I can't "think of her without ſome ſelf-reproach." Young Mrs. Marſhall would not ſuffer her ladyſhip to proceed, but cried out, "Ma-"dam, you were always kind and good; "Betty Barnes would never have been "what ſhe now is, if it had not been for "your charity and compaſſion." Her ladyſhip expreſſed a good deal of ſurprize at this diſcovery, but far from treating her with leſs reſpect, on account of her former obligations, ſhe careſſed her with great tenderneſs, and ſtill honours her with her favour and friendſhip.

Mrs. Marshall the elder ſtayed with the young folks ſome time after their return, and by her preſence enabled her daughter to receive, with a tolerable grace, the viſits of the neighbouring gentry, many of

whom came with the ill-natured deſign of laughing at her ignorance and ſimplicity; for as Mr. Evans had informed all his acquaintance of her circumſtances, as ſoon as he heard of his grandſon's marriage, they thought it impoſſible ſhe ſhould know how to behave. The ladies, however, found themſelves ſtrangely diſappointed; for, on all common ſubjects, ſhe could diſcourſe as pertinently as the ſevereſt critics amongſt them, and when any was ſtarted beyond her depth, ſhe wiſely remained ſilent; but this ſeldom happened, as ſhe had read a good deal, except when cards or places of amuſement were talked of. Here, indeed, ſhe was entirely at a loſs, for tho' her reading had been pretty extenſive, Hoyle was an author of whoſe merit ſhe was quite ignorant; and tho' ſhe had been ſix years in London, ſhe had never ſeen a play. The unworthy treatment ſhe received when at Vaux-hall, had made her extremely cautious of her company, and her father, after ſhe had the happineſs of being made known to him, was frequently reading her lectures againſt ſtage plays, as he called them, in which, he repreſented them as the ſchool of vice and immorality. He had taken his notion of theſe performances from a witty libidinous piece, which has been uſually exhibited on a city holiday;

holiday; but which, to the honour of the preſent manager of one of our theatres, is now laid aſide. This diſlike made his daughter ſuſpend her curioſity, till ſhe ſhould have the countenance and guard of a nearer relation than a father: but, methinks, I hear my reader cry out; what in the name of wonder could ſhe find to talk of? no plays! no cards! theſe two charming topics furniſh converſation for half the tea tables in England; bar her but ſcandal, and you reduce her to a perfect mute. But to let you into the ſecret, gentle reader, a very few viſits furniſhed her with a happy expedient to break from her taciturnity; even when theſe were the ſubjects, ſhe found that it was Garrick, Clive, or Cibber, that charmed the audience; ſhe, therefore, had little more to do, than to mention her approbation or diſlike of the ſentiments of the authors of the ſeveral plays in which they acted, and ſhe made others as much at a loſs as herſelf. Shakeſpear, Otway, and Rowe ſhe well underſtood, and by a happy memory could inſtantly recollect their ſeveral beauties, while moſt of thoſe who hoped to divert themſelves with her ignorance, ſhewed their own, by prefering the improbabilities of farce, and the abſurdities of pantomime to the productions of theſe great authors.

ENCOURAGED by the tender reſpect, with which ſhe was treated by her dear Mr. Marſhall and his mother, ſhe, in a ſhort time loſt all uneaſy reſtraint, and could converſe with a ſpritely freedom, that rendered her extremely pleaſing to all who enjoyed the happineſs of her acquaintance: This, however, is but the meaneſt part of her praiſe; a woman's higheſt merit conſiſts in well performing the ſeveral duties of domeſtic life. Mrs. Marſhall, therefore, tho' naturally fond of company, makes home her principal concern, and endeavours to render every individual there eaſy and happy; the fine lady has not ſo much engroſſed her, as to make her forget ſhe is a wife, a mother, and a miſtreſs. While Mr. Evans, her ſpouſe's grandfather, lived, which was about two years after ſhe was married, ſhe ſpent great part of her time in his company, and the old gentleman, at his death, teſtified his regard for her by a ſeparate donation in her favour, which was to deſcend to ſuch of her children as in her eſteem deſerved it beſt.

SHE is bleſſed with three fine children at preſent, but had her happineſs a little interrupted by the loſs of her firſt, who died of the ſmall pox. This ſtroke ſhe felt as a parent, but ſhe lamented it as a wife; while ſhe wept for her ſon, ſhe

bleſſed providence, that the pale meſſenger's commiſſion reached not to her huſband, and found a ſweet conſolation in mingling her tears with his, and perſuading him to reſignation. In a word, ſhe is now the happy miſtreſs of a well regulated family; her children rejoice when they hear her footſteps; for the little creatures ſee the delight their mamma takes in their ſatisfaction. Her ſervants obey from love and affection, as much as from intereſt; for ſhe gives no orders in a commanding or arbitrary manner, except when her gentler injunctions are diſobeyed, but condeſcends with an obliging eaſe, yet ſtill retains her authority as miſtreſs; for as ſhe has no concealments, no reſerves, ſhe never makes a favourite maid ſaucy by an undue confidence.

As heaven has put into her hands the power of relieving the diſtreſſed, it has alſo given her a large heart to ſcatter its bounties. The poor, the induſtrious poor, fly to her as to a common benefactreſs; ſhe relieves the wants of indigent merit, without forcing the unhappy on the mortifying detail of their miſeries, and often, by a ſeaſonable, tho' unaſk'd ſupply, prevents the ruin of families. While ſhe is thus diffuſing bleſſings all around her, what is the delight, the heart-felt ſatisfaction of her huſband? he

not

not only ſhares in the complacency and tranquillity of all about him, but has a large, a very large portion of happineſs, to which they are ſtrangers. His dear, his lovely wife, ſhews, by every action, the high regard ſhe has for his honour. She conſults his temper; and when the little rubs of life give him any diſquietude, ſhe ſooths his melancholy by every art of gentleneſs and perſuaſion: in the chearful momoment, ſhe is all gaiety and delight; whoever he eſteems, is ſure to be treated with the utmoſt reſpect by her; whoever he diſlikes, except ſhe can remove his diſapprobation, muſt never expect to be in any great degree of favour with her: they have no ſeparate inclinations,

"Ev'n thought meets thought, e'er from the lips it part,
"And each warm wiſh ſprings mutual from the heart." POPE.

HAVING placed my heroine in the happieſt of all happy ſituations, loving, and fondly beloved by a man of ſenſe and virtue, dear to his relations, and careſſed by all his friends, I ſhall now bid her adieu.

IF the picture of my fair favourite pleaſes ſo as to excite imitation, my end is, in a great meaſure, anſwered; that it may have that

that effect, let me exhort ſuch of my readers, who are, from their age and circumſtances, in danger rather of envying her the ſhining fortune ſhe now poſſeſſes than all the qualifications by which ſhe acquired it, to conſider, that wealth, with its many advantages, is but half poſſeſſed, while the mind is contracted and narrow; lace and embroidery glitter not half ſo far as one generous act, for that ſhines bright in the eye of heaven itſelf: her purity, humility, filial piety, conjugal tenderneſs, and maternal love, are what I would have them emulate; for in the words of an ingenious author:

"Gay ſilks and jewels are a vulgar road,
"Her radiant virtues ſhould create the mode."

THE END.